



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

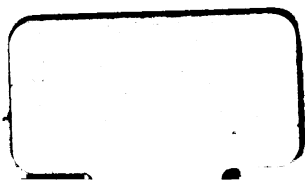
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



3 3433 07581344 8

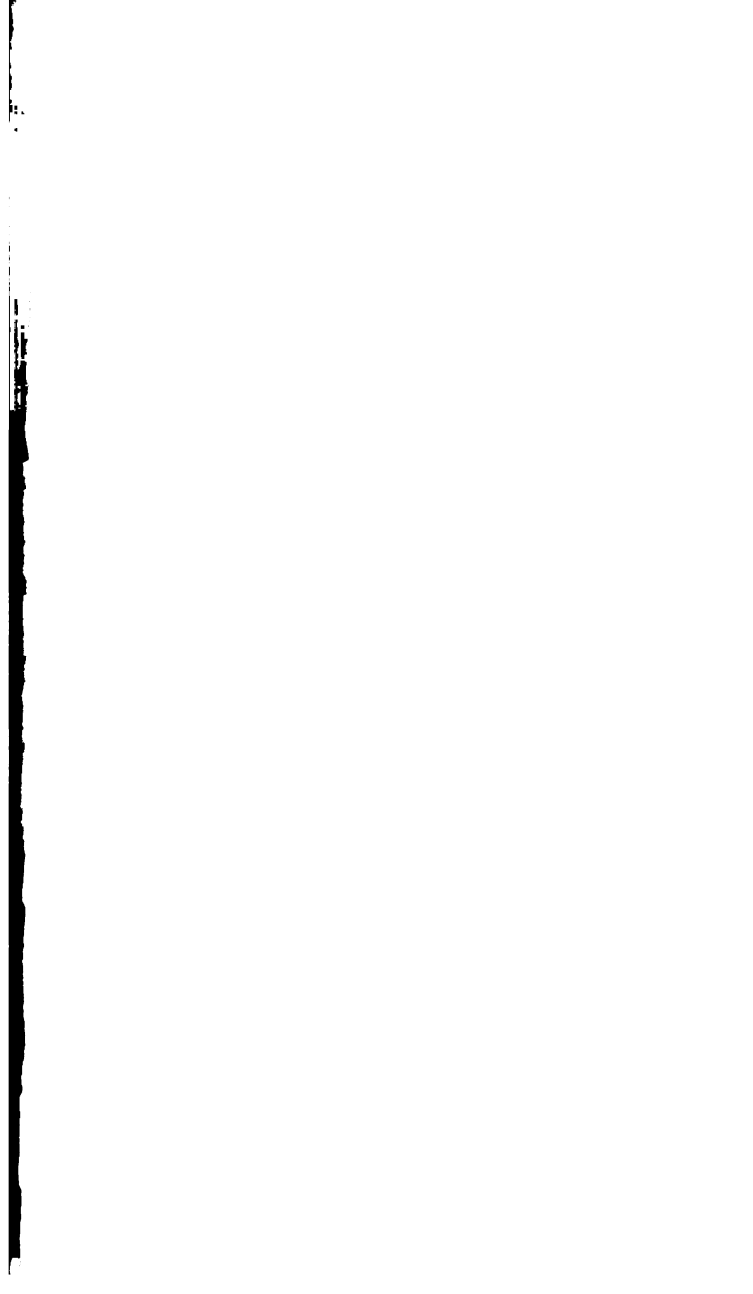


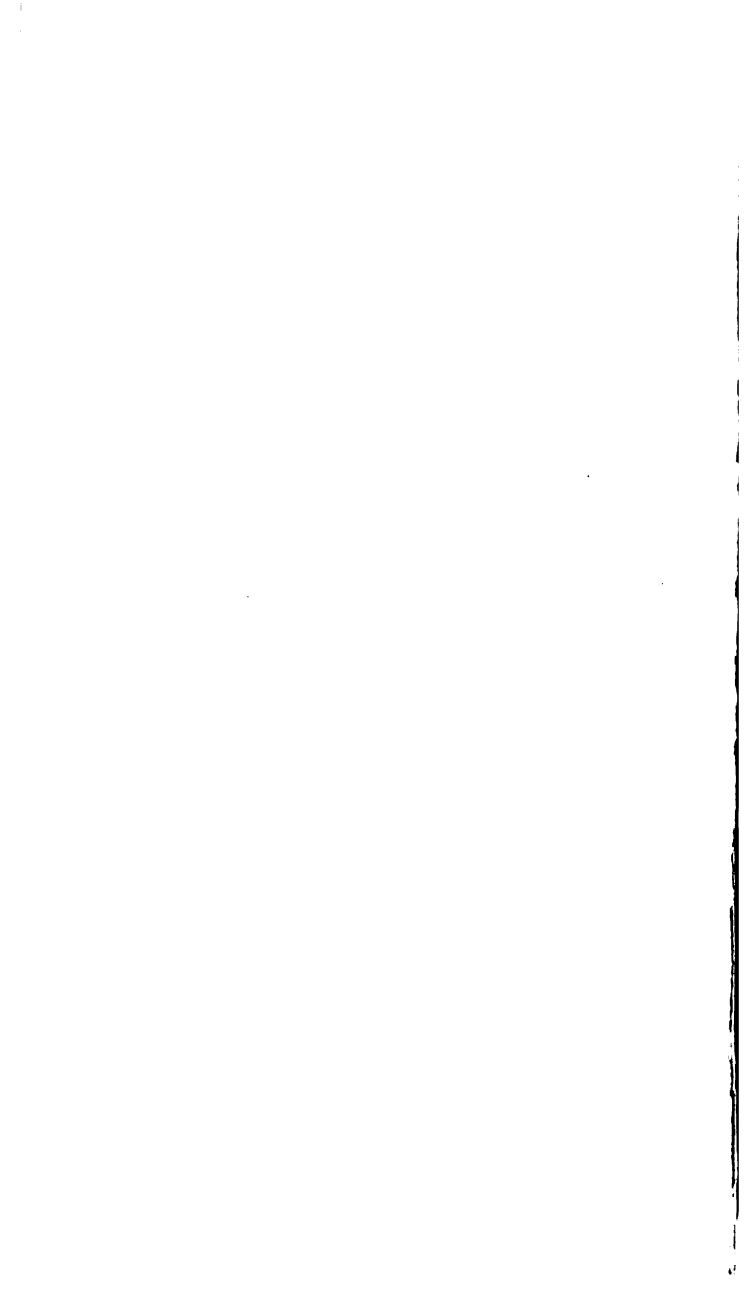
Copy  
NKT

Rousseau





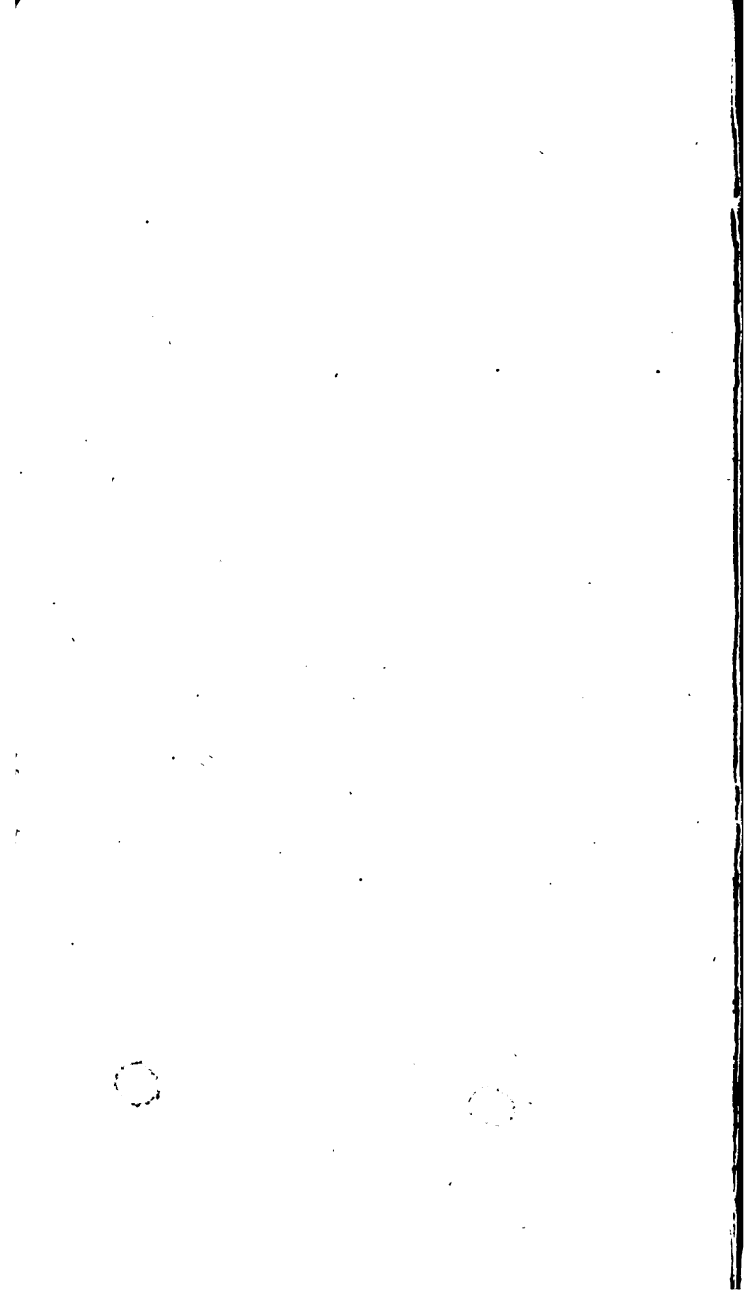




E L O I S A.

---

*wh*  
VOL. I.



E L O I S A:

OR,

A S E R I E S

OF

ORIGINAL LETTERS

COLLECTED AND PUBLISHED BY

*Mr. J. J. ROUSSEAU,*

CITIZEN OF GENEVA.

TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH.

---

A N E W E D I T I O N:

TO WHICH IS NOW FIRST ADDED,

THE SEQUEL OF JULIA;

OR, *THE NEW ELOISA.*

(Found amongst the Author's Papers after his Decease.)

TOGETHER WITH A PORTRAIT OF MONS. ROUSSEAU.

---

V O L. I.

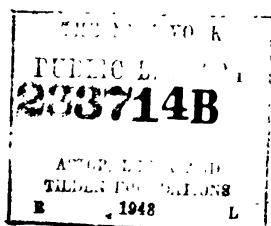
---

L O N D O N:

PRINTED BY H. BALDWIN:

SOLD BY R. BALDWIN, IN PATER-NOSTER ROW; AND  
T. BECKET, IN PALL-MALL.

M D C C L X X X I V.



---

T H E

AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

**G**REAT cities require publick theatres, and romances are necessary to a corrupt people. I saw the manners of the times, and have published these letters. Would to heaven I had lived in an age when I ought rather to have thrown them in the fire!

Though I appear only as the editor of this work, I confess I have had some share in the composition. But am I the sole author, and is the entire correspondence fictitious? Ye people of the world, of what importance is it to you? Certainly, to you it is all a fiction.

Every honest man will avow the books which he publishes. I have prefixed my name to these letters, not with a design to appropriate them to myself, but that I might be answerable for them. If they

VOL. I.

A

deserve



deserve censure : let it fall on me : if they have any merit, I am not ambitious of the praise. If it is a bad book I am the more obliged to own it : I do not wish to pass for better than I am.

As to the reality of the history, I declare, that, though I have been several times in the country of the two lovers, I never heard either of Baron d'Etange, his daughter, Mr. Orbe, Lord B——, or Mr. Wolmar. I must also inform the reader that there are several topographical errors in this work ; but, whether they are the effects of ignorance or design, I leave undetermined. This is all I am at liberty to say : let every one think as he pleases.

The book seems not calculated for an extensive circulation, as it is not adapted to the generality of readers. The style will offend people of taste, to austere men the *matter* will be alarming, and all the sentiments will seem unnatural to those who know not what is meant by the word VIRTUE. It ought to displease the devotee, the libertine, the philosopher ; to shock all the ladies of gallantry, and to scandalise every modest woman. By whom, therefore, will it

it be approved? Perhaps only by myself. Certain I am, however, that it will not meet with *moderate* approbation from any one.

Whoever may resolve to read these letters ought to arm himself with patience against faults of language, rusticity of stile, and pedantry of expression; he ought to remember that the writers are neither natives of France, wits, academicians, nor philosophers; but that they are young and unexperienced inhabitants of a remote village, who mistake the romantick extravagance of their own imagination for philosophy.

Why should I fear to speak my thoughts? This collection of letters, with all their gothick air, will better suit a married lady than books of philosophy: it may even be of service to those who, in an irregular course of life, have yet preserved some affection for virtue. As to young ladies, they are out of the question; no chaste virgin ever read a romance: but if perchance any young girl should dare to read a single page of this, she is inevitably lost. Yet, let her not accuse me as the cause of her perdition: the mischief was

done before; and since she has begun let her proceed, for she has nothing worse to fear.

May the austere reader be disgusted in the first volume, revile the Editor, and throw the book into the fire. I shall not complain of injustice; for probably, in his place, I might have acted in the same manner. But if, after having read to the end, any one should think fit to blame me for having published the book, let him, if he pleases, declare his opinion to all the world, except to me; for I perceive it would never be in my power to esteem such a man.

---

# P R E F A C E

BY THE

T R A N S L A T O R.

**I**T is by no means my design to swell the volume, or detain the reader from the pleasure he may reasonably expect in the perusal of this work: I say *reasonably*, because the author is a writer of great reputation. My sole intention is to give a concise account of my conduct in the execution of this arduous task; and to anticipate such accusations as may naturally be expected from some readers: I mean, those who are but imperfectly acquainted with the French language, or who happen to entertain improper ideas of translations in general.

If I had chosen to preserve the original title, it would have stood thus: *Julia, or the new Eloisa*, in the general title page; and, in the particular one, *Letters of two lovers, inhabitants of a small village at the foot of the Alps, collected and published, &c.* Whatever objection I might have to this title, upon the whole, my principal reason for preferring the name of *Eloisa* to that of *Julia*, was, because the publick seemed unanimous in distinguishing the work by the

A 3

former

vi      TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE.

former rather than the latter, and I was the more easily determined, as it was a matter of no importance to the reader.

The English nobleman who acts a considerable part in this romance is called in the original Lord *Bomston*, which I suppose M. Rousseau thought to be an English name, or at least very like one. It may possibly sound well enough in the ears of a Frenchman; but I believe the English reader will not be offended with me for having substituted that of Lord B — in its room. It is amazing that the French novelists should be as ignorant of our common names, and the titles of our nobility, as they are of our manners. They seldom mention our country, or attempt to introduce an English character, without exposing themselves to our ridicule. I have seen one of their celebrated romances, in which a British nobleman, called the Duke of *Workinsheton*, is a principal personage; and another, in which the one identical lover of the heroine is sometimes a Duke, sometimes an Earl, and sometimes a simple Baronet. *Catombridge* is, with them, an English city: and yet they endeavour to impose upon their readers by pretending their novels are translations from the English.

With regard to this *chef d'œuvre* of M. Rousseau, it has been received with uncommon avidity in France, Italy, Germany, Holland, and, in short, in every part of the Continent where the French language is understood. In England,  
besides

## TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE. vii

besides a very considerable number first imported, it has been many times reprinted; but, how much soever the world might be delighted with the original, I found it to be the general opinion of my countrymen, that it was one of those books which could not possibly be translated with any tolerable degree of justice to the authour: and this *general opinion*, I own, was a motive with me for undertaking the work.

There are, in this great city, a considerable number of industrious labourers, who maintain themselves, and perhaps a numerous family, by writing for the booksellers, by whom they are ranged in separate classes, according to their different abilities; the very lowest class of all being that of *Translators*. Now, it cannot be supposed that men, who are deemed incapable of better employment, can be perfectly acquainted either with their own or with any other language: besides, were they ever so well qualified, it becomes their duty to execute as much work in as little time as possible; for, at all events, they must have bread: therefore, it were unreasonable to expect they should spend their precious moments in poring over a difficult sentence, in order to render their version the more elegant. This I take to be the true reason why our translations from the French are in general so extremely bad.

I confess, the idioms of the two languages are very different, and that therefore it will, in some instances, be impossible to reach the deli-

## viii TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE.

cacy of expression in an elegant French writer; but, in return, their language is frequently so vague and diffuse, that it must be entirely the fault of the English translator if he does not often improve upon his original; but this will never be the case, unless we sit down with a design to translate the *ideas* rather than the *words* of our author.

Most of the translations which I have read, appear like a thin gauze spread over the original; the French language appears through every paragraph; but this is entirely owing to the want of attention, or want of ability, in the translator. Mr. Pope, and some few others, have shown the world, that not only the ideas of the most sublime writers may be accurately expressed in a translation, but that it is possible to improve and adorn them with beauties peculiar to the English language.

If, in the following pages, the reader expects to find a servile, literal translation, he will be mistaken. I never could, and never will, copy the failings of my author, be his reputation ever so great, in those instances where they evidently proceed from want of attention. M. Rousseau writes with great elegance, but he sometimes wants propriety of thought, and accuracy of expression.

As to the real merit of this performance, the universal approbation it has met with is a stronger recommendation than any thing I could say in its praise.

A D I A-

A  
D I A L O G U E  
BETWEEN  
A MAN OF LETTERS  
AND  
*M. J. J. ROUSSEAU,*  
ON THE  
SUBJECT of ROMANCES.

Published since his *ELOISA*, and intended as  
a PREFACE to that Work.



## A D V E R T I S E M E N T.

*THE following Dialogue was originally intended as a Preface to ELOISA ; but its form and length permitting me to prefix to that Work only a few extracts from it, I now publish it entire, in hopes that it will be found to contain some useful hints concerning Romances in general. Besides, I thought it proper to wait till the Book had taken its chance, before I discussed its inconveniences and advantages, being unwilling either to injure the Bookseller, or supplicate the indulgence of the Publick.*

---

# DIALOGUE, &c.

---

**N.** **T**HERE, take your manuscript: I have read it quite through.

**R.** *Quite through?* I understand you: you think there are not many readers will follow your example.

**N.** *Vel duo, vel nemo.*

**R.** *Turpe & miserabile.* But let me have your sincere opinion.

**N.** I dare not.

**R.** You have dared to the utmost by that single word: pray, explain yourself.

**N.** My opinion depends on your answer to this question: Is it a real, or fictitious correspondence?

**R.** I cannot perceive the consequence. In order to give one's sentiments of a book, of what importance can it be to know how it was written?

**N.** In this case it is of great importance. A portrait has its merit if it resembles the original, be that original ever so strange; but in a picture

which is the produce of imagination, every human figure should resemble human nature, or the picture is of no value: yet, supposing them both good in their kind, there is this difference, the portrait is interesting but to a few people, whilst the picture will please the publick in general.

*R.* I conceive your meaning. If these letters are portraits, they are uninteresting; if they are pictures, they are ill done. Is it not so?

*N.* Precisely.

*R.* Thus I shall snatch your answers before you speak. But, as I cannot reply directly to your question, I must beg leave to propose one in my turn. Suppose the worst: my Eloisa—

*N.* O! if she had really existed.

*R.* Well.

*N.* But certainly it is no more than a fiction.

*R.* Be it so.

*N.* Why, then, there never was any thing more absurd: the letters are no letters, the romance is no romance, and the personages are people of another world.

*R.* I am sorry for it, for the sake of this.

*N.* Console yourself; there is no want of fools among us; but your's have no existence in nature.

*R.* I could——No, I perceive the drift of your curiosity. But why do you judge so precipitately? Can you be ignorant how widely human nature differs from itself? how opposite its characteristics? how prejudice and manners vary according to times, places, and age. Who

## SUBJECT OF ROMANCES. xiii

is it that can prescribe bounds to nature, and say,  
Thus far shalt thou go, and no farther?

N. If such reasoning were allowed, monsters, giants, pygmies, and chimeras of all kinds might be specifically admitted into nature: every object would be disfigured, and we should have no common model of ourselves. I repeat it, in a picture of human nature every figure should resemble man.

R. I confess it; but, then, we should distinguish between the variety in human nature and that which is essential to it. What would you say of one who should only be able to know mankind in the picture of a Frenchman?

N. What would you say of one, who, without expressing features or shape, should paint a human figure covered with a veil? Should we not have reason to ask, where is the man?

R. Without expressing features or shape—Is this just? There is no perfection in human nature: that is, indeed, chimerical. A young virgin in love with virtue, yet swerving from its dictates, but reclaimed by the horror of a greater crime—a too easy friend punished at last by her own heart for her culpable indulgence—a young man, honest and sensible, but weak; yet in words a philosopher—an old gentleman bigotted to his nobility, and sacrificing every thing to opinion—a generous and brave Englishman, passionately wise, and, without reason, always reasoning.

N.

N. A husband, hospitable and gay, eager to introduce into his family his wife's quondam paramour.

R. I refer you to the inscription of the plate.

N. *Les belles ames*—Vastly fine!

R. O philosophy! What pains thou takest to contract the heart, and lessen human nature!

N. It is fallaciously elevated by a romantick imagination. But to the point—The two friends—What do you say of them?—and that sudden conversion at the altar?—divine grace, no doubt.—

R. But, Sir—

N. A pious christian, not instructing her children in their catechism; who dies without praying; whose death nevertheless edifies the parson, and converts an Atheist—O!

R. Sir—

N. As to the reader being interested, his concern is universal, and therefore next to none. Not one bad action; not one wicked man to make us fear the good. Events so natural, and so simple, that they scarce deserve the name of events—no surprise—no dramatick artifice—every thing happens just as it was expected. Is it worth while to register such actions as every man may see any day of his life in his own house, or in that of his neighbour?

R. So then you would have common men, and uncommon events? Now, I should rather desire the contrary. You took it for a romance: it is

not

SUBJECT OF ROMANCES. xv

not a romance; but, as you said before, a collection of letters.

N. Which are no letters at all: this, I think, I said also. What an epistolary stile! How full of bombast! What exclamations! What preparation! How emphatical to express common ideas! What big words and weak reasoning! Frequently neither sense, accuracy, art, energy, nor depth. Sublime language and grovelling thoughts. If your personages are in nature, confess, at least, that their stile is unnatural.

R. I own, that in the light in which you are pleased to view them it must appear so.

N. Do you suppose the publick will not judge in the same manner; and did you not ask my opinion?

R. I did, and I answer you with a design to have it more explicitly: now, it appears that you would be better pleased with letters written on purpose to be printed.

N. Perhaps I might; at least, I am of opinion that nothing should be printed which is not fit for the press.

R. So that in books we should behold mankind only as they choose to appear.

N. Most certainly, as to the authour; those whom he represents, such as they are. But in these letters this is not the case. Not one strong delineation—not a single personage strikingly characterised—no solid observations—no knowledge of the world. What can be learnt in the  
little

little sphere of two or three lovers or friends constantly employed in matters only relative to themselves?

R. We may learn to love human nature, whilst in extensive society we learn to hate mankind. Your judgement is severe; that of the publick ought to be still more so. Without complaining of injustice, I will tell you, in my turn, in what light these letters appear to me; not so much to excuse their defects, as to discover their source.

The perceptions of persons in retirement are very different from those of people in the great world; their passions being differently modified are differently expressed; their imaginations, constantly impressed by the same objects, are more violently affected. The same small number of images constantly return, mix with every idea, and create those strange and false notions so remarkable in people who spend their lives in solitude; but does it follow that their language is energick? No, it is only extraordinary: it is in our conversation with the world that we learn to speak with energy: first, because we must speak differently and better than others, and then, being every moment obliged to affirm what may not be believed, and to express sentiments which we do not feel, we endeavour at a persuasive manner, which supplies the place of interior persuasion. Do you believe that people of real sensibility express themselves with that vivacity, energy, and ardour which you so much admire in  
our

our drama and romances? No—true passion, full of itself, is rather diffusive than emphatical; it does not even think of persuasion, as it never supposes that its existence can be doubtful. In expressing its feelings, it speaks rather for the sake of its own ease than to inform others. Love is painted with more vivacity in large cities, but is it in the village, therefore, less violent?

N. So, then, the weakness of the expression is a proof of the strength of the passion.

R. Sometimes, at least, it is an indication of its reality. Read but a love-letter written by an authour who endeavours to shine as a man of wit: if he has any warmth in his brain, his words will set fire to the paper; but the flame will spread no farther: you may be charmed, and perhaps a little moved, but it will be a fleeting agitation, which will leave nothing except the remembrance of words. On the contrary, a letter really dictated by love, written by a lover influenced by a real passion, will be tame, diffuse, prolix, unconnected, and full of repetitions: his heart, overflowing with the same sentiment, constantly returns to the same expressions, and like a natural fountain flows continually without being exhausted. Nothing brilliant, nothing remarkable: one remembers neither words nor phrases; there is nothing to be admired, nothing striking: yet we are moved without knowing why. Though we are not struck with strength of sentiment, we are touched with its truth, and our hearts, in spite of us, sympathise with the  
writer



writer. But men of no sensibility, who know nothing more than the flowery jargon of the passions, are ignorant of those beauties, and despise them.

N. I am all attention:

R. Very well. I say, that in real love-letters the thoughts are common, yet the stile is not familiar. Love is nothing more than an illusion; it creates for itself another universe; it is surrounded with objects which have no existence but in imagination, and its language is always figurative; but its figures are neither just nor regular: its eloquence consists in its disorder, and when it reasons least it is most convincing. Enthusiasm is the last degree of this passion. When it is arrived at its greatest height, its object appears in a state of perfection; it then becomes its idol; it is placed in the heavens; and, as the enthusiasm of devotion borrows the language of love, the enthusiasm of love also borrows the language of devotion. Its ideas present nothing but Paradise, angels, the virtue of saints, and the delights of heaven. In such transport, surrounded by such images, is it not natural to expect sublime language? Can it possibly debase its ideas by vulgar expressions? Will it not on the contrary raise its stile, and speak with adequate dignity? What then becomes of your *epistolary stile*? It would do mighty well, to be sure, in writing to the object of one's adoration: in that case, they are not letters, but hymns.

N. We

N. We shall see what the world will say.

R. No: rather see the winter on my head. There is an age for experience, and another for recollection. Our sensibility may be extinguished by time; but the soul which was once capable of that sensibility remains. But to return to our letters: if you read them as the work of an authour who endeavours to please, or piques himself on his writing, they are certainly detestable. But, take them for what they are, and judge of them in their kind. Two or three young people, simple, if you will, but sensible, who, mutually expressing the real sentiments of their hearts, have no intention to display their wit. They know and love each other too well for self-admiration to have any influence among them. They are children, and therefore think like children. They are not natives of France, how then can they be supposed to write correctly? They lived in solitude, and therefore could know but little of the world. Entirely filled with one single sentiment, they are in a constant delirium, and yet presume to philosophise. Would you have them know how to observe, to judge, and to reflect? No: of these they are ignorant; but they are versed in the art of love, and all their words and actions are connected with that passion. Their ideas are extravagant, but is not the importance which they give to these romantick notions more amusing than all the wit they could have displayed? They speak of every thing; they are constantly mistaken; they teach

teach us nothing, except the knowledge of themselves ; but, in making themselves known, they obtain our affection. Their errors are more engaging than the wisdom of the wise. Their honest hearts, even in their transgressions, bear still the prejudice of virtue, always confident and always betrayed. Nothing answers their expectations ; every event serves to undeceive them. They are deaf to the voice of discouraging truth : they find nothing correspond with their own feelings, and, therefore, detaching themselves from the rest of the universe, they create in their separate society a little world of their own, which presents an entire new scene.

N. I confess that a young fellow of twenty, and girls of eighteen, though not uninstructed, ought not to talk like philosophers, even though they may suppose themselves such. I own also, for this distinction has not escaped me, that these girls became wives of merit, and the young man a better observer. I make no comparison between the beginning and the end of the work. The detail of domestick occurrences may efface, in some measure, the faults of their younger years : the chaste and sensible wife, the worthy matron, may obliterate the remembrance of former weakness. But even this, is a subject for criticism : the conclusion of the work renders the beginning reprehensible : one would imagine them to be two different books, which ought not to be read by the same people. If you in-

tended

## SUBJECT OF ROMANCES. xii

tended to exhibit rational personages, why would you expose them before they were become so? Our attention to the lessons of wisdom is destroyed by the child's-play by which they are preceded: we are scandalised at the bad before the good can edify us. In short, the reader is offended, and throws the book aside in the very moment when it might become serviceable.

R. On the contrary, I am of opinion, that to those who are disgusted with the beginning the end would be entirely superfluous; and that the beginning will be agreeable to those readers to whom the conclusion may be useful. So that those who do not read to the end will have lost nothing, because it is an improper book for them; and those to whom it may be of service would never have read it if it had begun with more gravity. Our lessons can never be useful unless they are so written as to catch the attention of those for whose benefit they were calculated.

I may have changed the means, and not the object. When I endeavoured to speak to *men*, I was not heard; perhaps, in speaking to children I shall gain more attention; and children would have no more relish for naked reason than for medicines ill disguised.

*Così all' egro fanciul porgiamo aspersi  
Di soave licor gl' orli del vaso;  
Succiamari ingannato in tanto ei beve,  
E dall' inganno suo vita riceve.*

But,

But, on the margin of the cup  
Let honey drop by stealth ;  
Drinking the bitter potion up,  
They're cheated into health.

N. Here, again, I am afraid you are deceived : they will sip on the edge of the vessel, but will not drink the liquor.

R. Be it so: it will not be my fault: I shall have done all in my power to make it palatable. My young folks are amiable; but to love them at thirty it is necessary to know them when they were ten years younger. One must have lived with them a long time to be pleased with their company; and, to taste their virtues, it is necessary we should first have deplored their failings. Their letters are not interesting at first; but we grow attached by degrees, and can neither continue nor quit them. They are neither elegant, easy, rational, sensible, nor eloquent; but there is a sensibility which gradually communicates itself to our hearts, which at last is found to supply the place of all the rest. It is a long romance, of which no one part has power to move us, and yet the whole produces a proper effect. At least, such were its effect upon me. Pray, were not you touched in reading it?

N. No; yet I can easily conceive your being affected: if you are the authour, nothing can be more natural; and if not, I can still account for it. A man of the world can have no taste for the extravagant ideas, the affected pathos, and false reasoning of your good folks; but they will  
suit

suit a recluse, for the reason which you have given: now, before you determine to publish the manuscript, you would do well to remember that the world is, not composed of hermits. All you can expect is that your young gentleman will be taken for a Celadon, your Lord B— for a Don Quixote, your young damsels for two Astreas, and that the world will laugh at them for a company of fools. But a continued folly cannot be entertaining. A man should write like Cervantes before he can expect to engage his reader to accompany him through four volumes of nonsense.

R. The very reason which would make you suppress this work will induce me to print it.

N. What! the certainty of its not being read?

R. A little patience and you will understand me. As to morals, I believe that all kinds of reading are useless to people of the world: first, because the number of new books which they run through so generally contradict each other that their effect is reciprocally destroyed. The few choice books which deserve a second perusal are equally ineffectual: for, if they are written in support of received opinions, they are superfluous; and if in opposition they are of no use; they are too weak to break the chain which attaches the reader to the vices of society. A man of the world may possibly, for a moment, be led from his wonted path by the dictates of morality; but he will find so many obstacles in the way, that he will speedily return to his former course.

course. I am persuaded there are few people, who have had a tolerable education, that have not made this essay at least once in their lives; but, finding their efforts vain, they are discouraged from any future attempt, and consider the morality of books as the jargon of idleness. The farther we retreat from business, great cities, and numerous societies, the more the obstacles to morality diminish. There is a certain point of distance where these obstacles cease to be insurmountable, and there it is that books may be of use. When we live in solitude, as we do not then read with a design to display our reading, we are less anxious to change our books, and bestow on them more reflexion; and as their principles find less opposition from without, their internal impression is more effectual. In retirement, the want of occupation, obliges those who have no resource in themselves, to have recourse to books of amusement. Romances are more read in the provincial towns than at Paris, in towns less than in the country, and there they make the deepest impression—the reason is plain.

Now, it happens unfortunately that the books which might amuse, instruct, and console the people in retirement, who are unhappy only in their own imagination, are generally calculated to make them still more dissatisfied with their situation. People of rank and fashion are the sole personages of all our romances. The refined taste of great cities, court maxims, the splendour of luxury, and Epicurean morality;  
these

## SUBJECT OF ROMANCES. xxv

these are their precepts, these their lessons of instruction. The colouring of their false virtues tarnishes their real ones. Polite manners are substituted for real duties, fine sentiments for good actions, and virtuous simplicity is deemed want of breeding.

What effect must such representations produce in the mind of a country gentleman, in which his freedom and hospitality is turned into ridicule, and the joy which he spreads through his neighbourhood is pronounced to be a low and contemptible amusement? What influence must they not have upon his wife, when she is taught that the care of her family is beneath a lady of her rank; and on his daughter, who, being instructed in the jargon and affectation of the city, disdains for his clownish behaviour the honest neighbour whom she would otherwise have married. With one consent, ashamed of their rusticity, and disgusted with their village, they leave their ancient mansion, which soon becomes a ruin, to reside in the metropolis; where the father, with his cross of St. Louis, from a gentleman becomes a sharper; the mother keeps a gaming house; the daughter amuses herself with a circle of gamesters: and frequently all three, after having led a life of infamy, die in misery and dishonour.

Authours, men of letters, and philosophers are constantly insinuating, that in order to fulfill the duties of society, and to serve our fellow-creatures, it is necessary that we should live in



great cities: according to them, to fly from Paris is to hate mankind; people in the country are nobody in their eyes; to hear them talk, one would imagine that where there are no pensions, academies, nor open tables, there is no existence.

All our productions verge to the same goal. Tales, romances, comedies, all are levelled at the country: all conspire to ridicule rustic simplicity; they all display, and extol, the pleasures of the great world: it is a shame not to know them; and not to enjoy them, a misfortune. How many of these sharpers and prostitutes, with which Paris is so amply provided, were first seduced by the expectation of these imaginary pleasures? Thus prejudice and opinion contribute to effect the political system, by attracting the inhabitants of each country to a single point of territory, leaving all the rest a desert: thus nations are depopulated, that their capitals may flourish; and this frivolous splendour, with which fools are captivated, makes Europe verge with celerity towards its ruin. The happiness of mankind requires that we should endeavour to stop this torrent of pernicious maxims. The employment of the clergy is to tell us that we must be good and wise, without concerning themselves about the success of their discourses; but a good citizen, who is really anxious to promote virtue, should not only tell us to be good, but endeavour to make the path agreeable which will lead us to happiness.

## SUBJECT OF ROMANCES. xxvii

N. Pray, my good friend, take breath for a moment. I am no enemy to useful designs; and I have been so attentive to your reasoning, that I believe it will be in my power to continue your argument. You are clearly of opinion, that to give to works of imagination the only utility of which they are capable, they must have an effect diametrically opposite to that which their authours generally propose; they must combat every human institution, reduce all things to a state of nature, make mankind in love with a life of peace and simplicity, destroy their prejudices and opinions, inspire them with a taste for true pleasure, keep them distant from each other, and, instead of exciting people to crowd into large cities, persuade them to spread themselves all over the kingdom, that every part may be equally enlivened. I also comprehend, that it is not your intention to create a world of Arcadian shepherds, of illustrious peasants labouring on their own acres, and philosophising on the works of nature, nor any other romantic beings, which exist only in books; but to convince mankind that in rural life there are many pleasures which they know not how to enjoy; that these pleasures are neither so insipid nor so gross as they imagine; that they are susceptible of taste and delicacy; that a sensible man, who should retire with his family into the country, and become his own farmer, might enjoy more rational felicity, than in the midst of the amusements of a great city; that a good

housewife may be a most agreeable woman, that she may be as graceful and as charming as any town coquet of them all; in short, that the most tender sentiments of the heart will more effectually animate society than the artificial language of polite circles, where the ill-natured laugh of satire is the pitiful substitute of that real mirth which no longer exists.—Have I not hit the mark?

R. It is the very thing; to which I will add but one reflexion. We are told that romances disturb the brain: I believe it true. In continually displaying to the reader the ideal charms of a situation very different from his own, he becomes dissatisfied, and makes an imaginary exchange for that which he is taught to admire. Desiring to be that which he is not, he soon believes himself actually metamorphosed, and so becomes a fool. If, on the contrary, romances were only to exhibit the pictures of real objects, of virtues and pleasures within our reach, they would then make us wiser and better. Books which are designed to be read in solitude should be written in the language of retirement: if they are meant to instruct, they should make us in love with our situation; they should combat and destroy the maxims of the great world, by showing them to be false and despicable, as they really are. Thus, Sir, a romance, if it be well written, or at least if it be useful, must be hissed, damned, and despised by the polite world, as being a mean, extravagant, and ridiculous performance;

## SUBJECT OF ROMANCES., xxix

formance; and thus what is folly in the eyes of the world is real wisdom.

N. Your conclusion is self-evident. It is impossible better to anticipate your fall, nor to be better prepared to fall with dignity. There remains but one difficulty: People in the country, you know, take their cue from us. A book calculated for them must first pass the censure of the town: if we think fit to damn it, its circulation is entirely stopped. What do you say to that?

R. The answer is quite simple. You speak of *wits* who reside in the country; whilst I would be understood to mean real country folks. You gentlemen who shine in the capital have certain prepossessions of which you must be cured: you imagine that you govern the taste of all France, when in fact three fourths of the kingdom do not know that you exist. The books which are damned at Paris often make the fortune of country booksellers.

N. But why will you enrich them at the expense of our's?

R. Banter me as you please; I shall persist. Those who aspire to fame must calculate their works for the meridian of Paris; but those who write with a view to do good must write for the country. How many worthy people are there, who pass their lives in cultivating a few paternal acres, far distant from the metropolis, and who think themselves exiled by the partiality of fortune? During the long winter evenings, de-

prived of society, they pass the time in reading such books of amusement as happen to fall into their hands. In their rustick simplicity they do not pride themselves on their wit or learning; they read for entertainment rather than instruction; books of morality and philosophy are entirely unknown to them. As to your romances, they are so far from being adapted to their situation, that they serve only to render it insupportable. Their retreat is represented to be a desert, so that, whilst they afford a few hours amusement, they prepare for them whole months of regret and discontent. Why may I not suppose, that, by some fortunate accident, this book, like many others of still less merit, will fall into the hands of those inhabitants of the fields, and that the pleasing picture of a life exactly resembling theirs will render it more tolerable? I have great pleasure in the idea of a married couple reading this novel together, imbibing fresh courage to support their common labours, and perhaps new designs to render them useful. How can they possibly contemplate the representation of a happy family without attempting to imitate the pleasing model? How can they be affected with the charms of conjugal union, even where love is wanting, without increasing and confirming their own attachment? In quitting their book, they will neither be discontented with their situation, nor disgusted at their labour: on the contrary, every object around them will assume a more delightful aspect, their duties will seem ennobled, their

## SUBJECT OF ROMANCES. xxxi

their taste for the pleasures of nature will revive; her genuine sensations will be rekindled in their hearts, and, perceiving happiness within their reach, they will learn to taste it as they ought: they will perform the same functions, but with another soul; and what they did before as peasants only, they will now transact as real patriarchs.

N. So far, you sail before the wind. Husbands, wives, matrons —— but, with regard to young girls: do you say nothing of those?

R. No. A modest girl will never read books of love. If she should complain of having been injured by the perusal of these volumes, she is unjust: she has lost no virtue; for she had none to lose.

N. Prodigious! attend to this, all ye amorous writers; for thus ye are all justified.

R. Provided they are justified by their own hearts, and the object of their writings.

N. And is that the case with you?

R. I am too proud to answer that question; but Eloisa had a certain rule by which she formed her judgement of books\*: if you like it, use it in judging of this. Authours have endeavoured to make the reading of romances serviceable to youth. There never was a more idle project. It is just setting fire to the house in order to employ the engines. Having conceived this ridiculous idea, instead of directing the moral of their writings towards its proper object,

B 4

it

\* See Vol. II. p. 74.

it is constantly addressed to young girls\*, without considering that these have no share in the irregularities complained of. In general, though their hearts may be corrupted, their conduct is blameless. They obey their mothers, in expectation of the time when it will be in their power to imitate them. If the wives do their duty, be assured the girls will not be wanting in their's.

N. Observation is against you in this point. The whole sex seem to require a time for libertinism, either in one state or the other. It is a bad leaven, which must ferment soon or late. Among a civilized people, the girls are easy, and the wives difficult, of access; but where mankind are less polite it is just the reverse: the first consider the crime only, and the latter the scandal. The principal question is, how to be best secured from temptation: as to the crime, it is of no consideration.

R. If we were to judge by its consequences, one would be apt to be of another opinion. But let us be just to the women: the cause of their irregularities is less owing to themselves than to our bad institutions. The extreme inequality in the different members of the same family must necessarily stifle the sentiments of nature. The vices and misfortunes of children are owing chiefly to the father's unnatural despotism. A young wife, unsuitably espoused, and a victim to the avarice or vanity of her parents, glories in effacing the scandal of her former  
virtue

\* This regards only the modern English romances.

virtue by her present irregularities. If you would remedy this evil, proceed to its source. Publick manners can only be reformed by beginning with private vices, which naturally arise from parents. But our reformers never proceed in this manner. Your cowardly authour preach only to the oppressed; and their morality can have no effect, because they have not the art to address the most powerful.

N. You, Sir, however, run no risk of being accused of servility; but may you not possibly be too sincere? In striking at the root of this evil, may you not be the cause of more—

R. Evil! to whom? In times of epidemical contagion, when all are infected from their infancy, would it be prudent to hinder the distribution of salutary medicines, under a pretence that they might do harm to people in health? You and I, Sir, differ so widely on this point, that if it were reasonable to expect that these letters can meet with any success, I am persuaded they will do more good than a better book.

N. Certainly your females are excellent preachers. I am pleased to see you reconciled with the ladies; for I was really concerned when you imposed silence on the sex.\*

R. You are too severe: I must hold my tongue: I am neither so wise nor so foolish as to be always in the right. Let us leave this bone for the criticks.

B 5

N. With

\* See the letter to M. d'Alembert *sur les Spectacles*.



N. With all my heart, lest they should want one. But, suppose you had nothing to fear from any other quarter, how will you excuse to a certain severe censor of the stage those warm descriptions, and impassioned sentiments, which are so frequent in these letters? Show me a scene in any of our theatrical pieces equal to that in the wood at Clarens, or that of the dressing-room. Read the letter on theatrical amusements; read the whole collection. In short, be consistent, or renounce your former opinions. What would you have one think?

R. I would have the criticks be consistent with themselves, and not judge till they have thoroughly examined. Let me intreat you to read once more with attention the parts you have mentioned; read again the preface to *Narcisse*, and you will there find an answer to the accusation of inconsistency. Those forward gentlemen, who pretend to discover that fault in the *Devin du Village*, will undoubtedly think it much more glaring in this work. They will only act in character; but you—

N. I recollect two passages\*. You do not much esteem your contemporaries.

R. Sir, I am also their contemporary! O, why was I not born in an age in which I ought to have burnt this collection!

N. Extravagant as usual! however, to a certain degree, your maxims are just. For instance; if your Elpisa had been chaste from the beginning

\* Preface to *Narcisse*—Lettre à M. d'Alembert.

## SUBJECT OF ROMANCES. xxxv

ning ~~she~~ would have afforded us less instruction; for to whom would she have served as a model? In the most corrupt ages mankind are fond of the most perfect lessons of morality; theory supplies the place of practice: and, at the small expense of a little leisure-reading, they satisfy the remnant of their taste for virtue.

R. Sublime authours, relax a little your perfect models, if you expect that we should endeavour to imitate them. To what purpose do you vaunt unspotted purity? rather show us that which may be recovered, and perhaps there are some who will attend to your instructions.

N. Your young hero has already made those reflexions; but, no matter; you would be thought no less culpable in having shown us what *is done*, in order to show what *ought to be done*. Besides, to inspire the girls with love, and to make wives reserved, is overturning the order of things, and recalling those trifling morals which are now totally proscribed by philosophy. Say what you will, it is very indecent, nay scandalous, for a girl to be in love: nothing but a husband can authorise a lover. It was certainly very impolitick to be indulgent to the unmarried ladies, who are not allowed to read you, and severe upon the married ones, by whom you are to be judged. Believe me, if you were fearful of success, you may be quite easy: you have taken sufficient care to avoid an affront of that nature. Be it as it may, I shall not betray your confidence. I hope your imprudence will not carry you too

far. If you think you have written an useful book, publish it; but by all means conceal your name.

R. Conceal my name! Will an honest man speak to the publick from behind a curtain? Will he dare to print what he does not dare to own? I am the editor of this book; and I shall certainly fix my name in the title-page.

N. Your name in the title-page!

R. Yes, Sir, in the title-page.

N. You are surely in jest!

R. I am positively in earnest.

N. What, your real name? *Jean Jacques Rousseau*, at full length!

R. *Jean Jacques Rousseau* at full length.

N. You surely don't think—What will the world say of you?

R. What they please. I don't print my name with a design to pass for the authour, but to be answerable for the book. If it contains any thing bad, let it be imputed to me; if good, I desire no praise. If the work in general deserves censure there is so much more reason for prefixing my name: I have no ambition to pass for better than I am.

N. Are you content with that answer?

R. Yes, in an age when it is impossible for any one to be good.

N. Have you forgot *les belles ames*?

R. By nature *belles*, but corrupted by your institutions.

N. And so we shall behold in the title-page of  
a book

a book of love-epistles, by *J. J. Rousseau, Citizen of Geneva!*

*R.* No, not *Citizen of Geneva*. I shall not profane the name of my country. I never prefix it but to those writings by which I think it will not be dishonoured.

*N.* Your own name is no dishonourable one. and you have some reputation to lose. This mean and weak performance will do you no service. I wish it was in my power to dissuade you; but, if you are determined to proceed, I approve of your doing it boldly and with a good grace. At least this will be in character. But, a-propos, do you intend to prefix your motto?

*R.* My bookseller asked me the same question, and I thought it so humorous that I promised to give him the credit of it. No, Sir, I shall not prefix my motto to this book; nevertheless, I am now less inclined to relinquish it than ever. Remember that I thought of publishing these letters at the very time when I wrote against the theatres, and that a desire of accusing one of my writings has not made me disguise truth in the other. I have accused myself before-hand, perhaps with more severity than any other person will accuse me. He who prefers truth to fame may hope to prefer it to life itself. You say that we ought to be consistent: I doubt whether that be possible to man; but it is not impossible to act with invariable truth. This I will endeavour to do.

*N.* Why then, when I ask whether you are the authour of these letters, do you evade the question?

*R. I*

R. I will not lie, even in that case.

N. But you refuse to speak the truth.

R. It is doing honour to truth to keep it secret. You would have less difficulty with one who made no scruple of a lie. Besides, you know men of taste are never mistaken in the pen of an authour. How can you ask a question which it is your business to resolve?

N. I have no doubt with regard to some of the letters; they are certainly your's: but in others you are quite invisible, and I much doubt the possibility of disguise in this case. Nature, who does not fear being known, frequently changes her appearance; but art is often discovered, by attempting to be too natural. These epistles abound with faults that the most arrant scribbler would have avoided. Declamation, repetitions, contradictions, &c. in short, it is impossible that a man who can write better could ever resolve to write so ill. What man in his senses would have made that foolish Lord B— advance such a shocking proposal to Eloisa? Or what authour would not have corrected the ridiculous behaviour of this young hero, who, though positively resolved to die, takes good care to apprize all the world of his intention, and finds himself at last in perfect health? Would not any writer have known that he ought to support his characters with accuracy, and vary his stile accordingly, and he would then infallibly have excelled even nature herself?

I have observed, that in a very intimate society both stile and characters are extremely similar, and that when two souls are closely united, their thoughts, words, and actions will be nearly the same. This Eloisa, as she is represented, ought to be an absolute enchantress; all who approach her ought immediately to resemble her; all her friends should speak one language: but these effects are much easier felt than imagined; and even if it were possible to express them, it would be imprudent to attempt it. An authour must be governed by the conceptions of the multitude, and therefore all refinement is improper. This is the touchstone of truth, and in this it is that a judicious eye will discover real nature.

R. Well, and so you conclude—

N. I do not conclude at all: I am in doubt; and this doubt has tormented me inexpressibly, during the whole time I spent in reading these letters. If it be all a fiction, it is a bad performance; but say that these two women have really existed, and I will read their epistles once a year to the end of my life.

R. Strange! what signifies it whether they ever existed or not? They are no where to be found: they are no more.

N. No more! So they actually did exist.

R. The conclusion is conditional: if they ever did exist, they are now no more.

N. Between you and I, these little subtilties are more conclusive than perplexing.

R. They

R. They are such as you force me to use, that I may neither betray myself nor tell an untruth.

N. In short, you may do as you think proper; your title is sufficient to betray you.

R. It discovers nothing relative to the matter in question; for who can tell whether I did not find this title in the manuscript? Who knows whether I have not the same doubts which you have? Whether all this mystery be not a pretext to conceal my own ignorance?

N. But, however, you are acquainted with the scene of action. You have been at *Vevei*, in the *Pays de Vaud*.

R. Often; and I declare that I never heard either of Baron d'Etange, or his daughter. The name of Wolmar is entirely unknown in that country. I have been at *Clarens*, but never saw any house like that which is described in these letters. I passed through it, in my return from Italy, in the very year when the sad catastrophe happened, and I found nobody in tears for the death of Eloisa Wolmar. In short, as much as I can recollect of the country, there are, in these letters, several transpositions of places, and topographical errors, proceeding either from ignorance in the authour, or from a design to mislead the reader. This is all you will learn from me on this point, and you may be assured that no one else shall draw any thing more from me.

N. All

## SUBJECT OF ROMANCES. xli

*N.* All the world will be as curious as I am. If you print this work, tell the publick what you have told me. Do more, write this conversation as a Preface: it contains all the information necessary for the reader.

*R.* You are in the right. It will do better than any thing I could say of my own accord. Though these kind of apologies seldom succeed.

*N.* True, where the authour spares himself. But I have taken care to remove that objection here. Only, I would advise you to transpose the parts. Pretend that I wanted to persuade you to publish, and that you objected. This will be more modest, and will have a better effect.

*R.* Would that be consistent with the character for which you praised me a while ago?

*N.* It would not. I spoke with a design to try you. Leave things as they are.

E L O I S A.





---

# E L O I S A.

---

## LETTER I.

TO ELOISA.

**I** MUST fly from you, Eloisa; I feel I must. I ought not to have stayed with you so long; or rather, I ought never to have beheld you. But now, what can I do! On what shall I determine? You have promised me your friendship; consider my perplexity, and give me your advice.

You are sensible that I only came into the family in consequence of an invitation from your mother. Believing me possessed of some little knowledge, she thought I might be of service in the education of her beloved daughter, in a situation where proper masters were not to be obtained. Proud to be instrumental in adding any embellishment to so fine a natural genius, I ventured on the perilous task, unmindful of the danger, or at least fearless of the consequence. I will not tell you that I begin to suffer for my presumption. I hope I shall never so far forget myself as to say any thing which you  
ought

ought not to hear, or fail in that respect which is due to your virtue even more than to your birth or personal charms. If I must suffer, I have the consolation at least of suffering alone; nor could I enjoy any happiness at the expense of your's.

And yet I see and converse with you daily : in the mean while I am but too sensible that you innocently aggravate a misfortune which you cannot pity, and of which you ought to be ignorant. It is true, I know what prudence dictates in a case like this, where there is no hope; and I should certainly follow her advice if I could reconcile it to my notions of probity. But, how can I with decency quit a family into which I was so kindly invited, where I have received so many obligations, and where, by the tenderest of mothers, I am thought of some utility to a daughter whom she loves more than all the world? How can I resolve to deprive this affectionate parent of the pleasure she proposes herself in one day surprising her husband with your improvements, which she now conceals from his knowledge with that view? Shall I impolitely quit the house without taking leave of her? Shall I declare to her the cause of my retreat, and would not she have reason to be offended with this confession from a man whose inferior birth and fortune prevent his aspiring to the happiness of being your's?

There seems but one method to extricate me from this embarrassment: the hand which involved

involved me in it must also relieve me. As you are the cause of my offense, you must inflict my punishment: out of compassion, at least deign to banish me from your presence. Show my letter to your parents; let your doors be shut against me; spurn me from you in what manner you please: from you I can bear any thing; but of my own accord I have no power to fly from you.

Spurn me from you! fly your presence! and why? Why should it be a crime to be sensible of merit, and to love that which we cannot fail to esteem? No, charming Eloisa! your beauty might have dazzled my eyes, but it never would have misled my heart, had it not been animated with something yet more powerful. It is that captivating union between a lively sensibility and invariable sweetness of disposition; it is that tender feeling for the distresses of your fellow-creatures; it is that amazing justness of sentiment, and that exquisite taste, which derive their excellence from the purity of your soul; it is, in a word, those charms of your mind more than those of your person which I adore. I confess it may be possible to imagine beauties still more transcendently perfect; but more amiable, and more deserving the heart of a wise and virtuous man —no, no, Eloisa, that is impossible.

I am sometimes inclined to flatter myself that as there is a parity in our years, and a similitude in our taste, there is also a secret sympathy in our affections. We are both so young that our  
nature

nature can hitherto have received no false bias from any thing adventitious, and all our inclinations seem to coincide. Before we have imbibed the uniform prejudices of the world, our general perceptions seem uniform; and why may I not suppose the same concord in our hearts, which in our judgement is so strikingly apparent? Sometimes it happens that our eyes meet; involuntary sighs betray our feelings, tears steal from——O! my Eloisa! if this union of soul should be a divine impulse——if heaven should have destined us——all the power on earth——Ah, pardon me! I am bewildered: I have mistaken a vain wish for hope: the ardour of my desires gave to their imaginary object a solidity which did not exist. I foresee with horror the torments which my heart is preparing for itself. I do not seek to indulge my weakness; if it were in my power I would hate it. You may judge of the purity of my sentiments by the favour I ask. Destroy, if possible, the source of the poison that both supports and kills me. I am determined to effect my cure or my death, and I therefore implore your rigorous injunction, as a lover would supplicate your compassion.

Yes, I promise, I swear, on my part, to do every thing in my power to recover my reason; or to bury my growing anxiety in the inmost recesses of my soul. But, for heaven's sake, turn from me those lovely eyes that pierce me to the heart; suffer me no longer to gaze upon  
that

that face, that mien, those arms, those hands, those flowing locks, that engaging gesture: disappoint the imprudent avidity of my looks; no longer let me hear that enchanting voice, which cannot be heard without emotion: be, alas! in every respect another woman, that my soul may return to its former tranquillity.

Shall I tell you without apology? when we are engaged in the puerile amusements of these long evenings, you cruelly permit me, in the presence of the whole family, to increase a flame that is already but too violent. You are not more reserved to me than to any other. Even yesterday you almost suffered me, as a forfeit, to take a kiss: you made but a faint resistance. Happily I did not persist. I perceived, by my increasing palpitation, that I was rushing upon my ruin, and therefore stopped in time. If I had dared to indulge my inclination, that kiss would have been accompanied with my last sigh, and I should have died the happiest of mortals. L  
o  
k  
s

For heaven's sake let us quit those childish amusements, since they may possibly be attended with such fatal consequences: even the most simple of them is not without its danger. I tremble as often as our hands meet, and I know not how it happens, but they meet continually. I start the instant I feel the touch of your finger; I am seized with a fever, or rather delirium, in these sports; my senses gradually forsake me, and when I am thus absent, what can I say, what

what can I do, where hide myself, or how be answerable for my conduct?

The hours of instruction are no less dangerous than those of amusement. Your mother or your cousin no sooner leave the room than I observe a change in your behaviour. You at once assume an air so serious and cold, that my respect, and the fear of offending, destroy my presence of mind, and deprive me of my judgement: so that it is with difficulty and trembling that I gabble over a lesson, which even your excellent talents are unable to pursue. This affected change in your behaviour is hurtful to us both: you confound me, and deprive yourself of instruction, whilst I am entirely at a loss to account for this sudden alteration in a person naturally so even-tempered and reasonable. Tell me, pray, tell me, why you are so sprightly in publick, and so reserved when by ourselves? I imagined it ought to be just the contrary, and that one should be more or less upon one's guard in proportion to the number of spectators. But, instead of this, when we are alone you are ceremonious, and familiar when we join company. If you deign to be more equal, probably my torment will be less.

If that compassion which is natural to elevated minds can move you in behalf of an unfortunate youth, whom you have honoured with some share in your esteem, you have it in your power, by a small change in your conduct, to render his situation less irksome, and to enable him, with  
more

more tranquillity, to support his silence, and his sufferings: but if you find yourself not touched with his situation, and are determined to exert your power to ruin him, he will acquiesce without murmuring: he would rather—much rather, perish by your order, than incur your displeasure by his indiscretion. Now, though you are become mistress of my future destiny, I cannot reproach myself with having indulged the least presumptive hope. If you have been so kind as to read my letter, you have complied with all I should have dared to request, even though I had no refusal to fear.

## L E T T E R II.

TO ELOISA.

**H**OW strangely was I deceived in my first letter! Instead of alleviating my pain, I have increased my distress, by incurring your displeasure: and, alas! that, I find, is the least supportable of all misfortunes. Your silence, your cold and reserved behaviour, but too plainly indicate my doom. You have indeed granted one part of my petition, but it was to punish me with the greater severity.

*E poi ch' amor di me vi fece accorta  
Fur i biondi capelli allor velati,  
• E l'amorosi sguardo in se racolto.*

At distance kept from my presumptuous love,  
Your fair and flowing locks no more are seen,  
And every kind and tender look restrain'd.



You have withdrawn that innocent familiarity in publick of which I foolishly complained; and in private you are become still more severe: you are so ingeniously cruel, that both your complaisance and reserve are equally intolerable.

Were it possible for you to conceive how much your indifference affects me, you would certainly think my punishment too rigorous. What would I not give to recal that unfortunate letter, and that I had borne my former sufferings without complaint! So fearful am I of adding to my offense, that I should never have ventured to write a second letter, if I did not flatter myself with the hopes of expiating the crime I committed in the first. Will you deem it any satisfaction if I confess that I mistook my own intention? or shall I protest that I never was in love with you?—O! no; I can never be guilty of such a horrid perjury! The heart which is impressed with your fair image must not be polluted with a lie. If I am doomed to be unhappy—be it so. I cannot stoop to any thing mean or deceitful to extenuate my fault. My pen refuses to disavow the transgression of which my heart is but too justly accused.

Methinks I already feel the weight of your indignation, and await its final consequence as a favour which I have some right to expect; for the passion which consumes me deserves to be punished, but not despised. For heaven's sake, do not leave me to myself; condescend, at least, to determine my fate; deign to let me know  
your

your pleasure. I will obey implicitly whatever you think proper to command. Do you impose eternal silence? I will be silent as the grave. Do you banish me your presence? I swear that I will never see you more. Will my death appease you? that would be of all things the least difficult. There are no terms which I am not ready to subscribe, unless they should enjoin me not to love you; yet, even in that I would obey you—if it were possible.

A hundred times a day I am tempted to throw myself at your feet, bathe them with my tears, and to implore your pardon, or receive my death; but a sudden terror damps my resolution; my trembling knees want power to bend; my words expire upon my lips, and my soul finds no support against the dread of offending you.

Was ever mortal in so terrible a situation! My heart is but too sensible of its offense, yet cannot cease to offend: my crime and my remorse conspire in its agitation, and, ignorant of my destiny, I am cruelly suspended between the hope of your compassion and the fear of punishment.

But, no! I do not hope—I have no right to hope—I ask no indulgence, but that you will hasten my sentence. Let your just revenge be satisfied. Do you think me sufficiently wretched, to be thus reduced to solicit vengeance on my own head? Punish me, it is your duty; but if you retain the least degree of compassion for me,

do not, I beseech you, drive me to despair with those cold looks, and that air of reserve and discontent. When once a criminal is condemned to die, all resentment should cease.

## L E T T E R III.

TO ELOISA.

**D**O not be impatient, madam; this is the last importunity you will receive from me. Little did I apprehend, in the dawn of my passion, what a train of ills I was preparing for myself! I then foresaw none greater than that of a hopeless passion, which reason, in time, might overcome; but I soon experienced one much more intolerable in the pain which I felt at your displeasure, and now the discovery of your uneasiness is infinitely more afflicting than all the rest. O Eloisa! I perceive it with bitterness of soul, my complaints affect your peace of mind. You continue invincibly silent; but my heart is too attentive not to penetrate into the secret agitations of your mind. Your eyes appear gloomy, thoughtful, and fixed upon the ground; sometimes they wander, and fall undesignedly upon me; your bloom fades, an unusual paleness overspreads your cheeks; your gaiety forsakes you; you seem oppressed with grief; and the unalterable sweetness of your disposition alone enables you to preserve the shadow of your usual good-humour.

Whether

Whether it be through sensibility, disdain, or even compassion for my sufferings, I see you are affected by them. I fear, however, to augment your distress, and am more unhappy on this account, than flattered with the hope it might possibly occasion; for, if I know myself, your happiness is infinitely dearer to me than my own.

I now begin to be sensible that I judged very erroneously of the feelings of my heart, and perceive too late, that what I at first took for a fleeting phrensy is but to inseparably interwoven with my future destiny. It is your late melancholy that has made the increasing progress of my malady apparent. The lustre of your eyes, the delicate glow of your complexion, your excellent understanding, and all the enchantment of your former vivacity, could not have affected me half so much as your present manifest dejection. Be assured, divine maid, if it were possible for you to feel the intolerable flame, which your last eight pensive days of languor and discontent have kindled in my soul, you yourself would shudder at the misery you have caused. But there is now no remedy: my despair whispers that nothing but the cold tomb will extinguish the raging fire within my breast.

Be it so: he that cannot command felicity may at least deserve it. You may possibly be obliged to honour with your esteem the man whom you did not design to answer. I am young and may, perchance, one day, merit the regard

of which I am now unworthy. In the mean time, it is necessary that I should restore to you that repose which I have lost for ever, and of which you are, by my presence, in spite of myself, deprived. It is but just that I alone should suffer, since I alone am guilty. Adieu, then, too charming Eloisa! Resume your tranquillity, and be again happy. To-morrow I am gone for ever. But be assured, that my violent, spotless passion for you will end only with my life; that my heart, full of so divine an object, will never debase itself by admitting a second impression; that it will divide all its future homage between you and virtue, and that no other flame shall ever profane the altar at which Eloisa was adored.

---

### B I L L E T I.

FROM ELOISA.

**B**E not too positive in your opinion that your absence is become necessary. A virtuous heart would overcome its folly, or be silent, and thus might become, perhaps, too formidable.—But you—And yet you may stay.

---

### A N S W E R.

**I**T was a long time silent: your cold indifference forced me to speak at last. Virtue may possibly get the better of folly, but who can bear to be despised by those they love? I must be gone.

B I L L E T

## B I L L E T II.

FROM ELOISA.

**N**O, Sir, after what you have seemed to feel; after what you have dared to tell me; a man, such as you feign yourself, will not fly—he will do more.

## A N S W E R.

I Have feigned nothing except a *moderate* passion in a heart filled with despair. To-morrow you will be satisfied—and, notwithstanding what you may then say, I shall have done less than it would be to fly from you.

## B I L L E T III.

FROM ELOISA.

**F**OOLISH youth! if my life be dear to thee, attempt not thy own. I am beset, and can neither speak nor write to you till to-morrow—Wait!

## L E T T E R IV.

FROM ELOISA.

**M**UST I then, at last, confess, the fatal, the ill-disguised secret! How often have I sworn that it should never burst from my heart but with my life! Thy danger wrests it from me. It is gone, and my honour is lost for ever. Alas! I have but too religiously performed my

vow: can there be a death more cruel than to survive one's honour?

What shall I say? how shall I break the painful silence? or, rather, have I not said all, and am I not already too well understood? Alas! thou hast seen too much not to divine the rest. Imperceptibly deluded into the snare of the seducer, I see, without being able to avoid it, the horrid precipice before me. Artful man! it is not thy passion, but mine, which excites thy presumption. Thou observest the distraction of my soul; thou availed thyself of it to accomplish my ruin; and, now thou hast rendered me despicable, my greatest misfortune is, that I am forced to behold thee also in a despicable light. Ungrateful wretch! in return for my esteem, thou hast ruined me. Had I supposed thy heart capable of exulting, believe me thou hadst never enjoyed this triumph.

Well thou knowest, and it will increase thy remorse, that there was not in my soul one vicious inclination. My virtue and innocence were inexpressibly dear to me, and I pleased myself with the hopes of cherishing them in a life of industrious simplicity. But to what purpose my endeavour, since heaven rejects my offering? The very first day we met, I imbibed the poison which now infects my senses and my reason: I felt it instantly, and thine eyes, thy sentiments, thy discourse, thy guilty pen, daily increase its malignity.

I have

I have neglected nothing to stop the progress of this fatal passion. Sensible of my own weakness, how gladly would I have evaded the attack; but the eagerness of my pursuit hath baffled my precaution. A thousand times I have resolved to cast myself at the feet of those who gave me being—a thousand times I have determined to open to them my guilty heart: but they can form no judgement of its condition; they would apply but common remedies to a desperate disease: my mother is weak and without authority; I know the inflexible severity of my father, and I should bring down ruin and dishonour upon myself, my family, and thee. My friend is absent, my brother is no more.

I have not a protector in the world to save me from the persecution of my enemy. In vain I implore the assistance of Heaven; Heaven is deaf to the prayers of irresolution. Every thing conspires to increase my anxiety—every circumstance combines to abandon me to myself, or rather cruelly to deliver me up to thee—all nature seems thy accomplice—my efforts are vain, I adore thee in spite of myself. And shall that heart which, in its full vigour, was unable to resist, shall it only half surrender? Shall a heart which knows no dissimulation attempt to conceal the poor remains of its weakness? No; the first step was the most difficult, and the only one which I ought never to have taken. Shall I now pretend to stop at the rest? No; that first



false step plunged me into the abyss, and my degree of misery is entirely in thy power.

Such is my horrid situation, that I am forced to turn to the authour of my misfortunes, and implore his protection against himself. I might—I know I might—have deferred this confession of my despair: I might, for some time longer, have disguised my shameful weakness, and by yielding gradually have imposed upon myself. Vain dissimulation! which could only have flattered my pride, but could not save my virtue. I see but too plainly whither my first error tends, and shall not endeavour to prepare for, but to escape perdition.

Nevertheless, if thou art not the very lowest of mankind—if the least spark of virtue lives within thy soul—if it retain any vestige of those sentiments of honour which seemed to penetrate thy heart, thou canst not possibly be so vile as to take any unjust advantage of a confession forced from me by a fatal distraction of my senses. No; I know thee well: thou wilt support my weakness, thou wilt become my safeguard, thou wilt defend my person against my own heart. Thy virtue is the last refuge of my innocence; my honour dares confide in thine, for thou canst not preserve one without the other. Ah! let thy generous soul preserve them both, and at least, for thy own sake, be merciful.

Good God! am I thus sufficiently humbled? I write to thee on my knees; I bathe my paper with my tears; I pay to thee my timorous ho-  
mage;

mage : and yet thou art not to believe me ignorant that it was in my power to have reversed the scene ; and that, with a little art, which would have rendered me despicable in my own eyes, I might have been obeyed and worshipped. Take the frivolous empire, I relinquish it to my friend ; but leave me, ah ! leave me, my innocence. I had rather live thy slave, and preserve my virtue, than purchase thy obedience at the price of my honour. Shouldest thou deign to hear me, what gratitude mayest thou not claim from her who will owe to thee the recovery of her reason ? How charming must be the tender union of two souls unacquainted with guilt ! Thy vanquished passions will prove the source of happiness, and thy pleasures will be worthy of heaven itself.

I hope, nay I am confident, that the man to whom I have given my whole heart will not belie my opinion of his generosity ; but I flatter myself, also, if he is mean enough to take the least advantage of my weakness, that contempt and indignation will restore my senses, and that I am not yet sunk so low as to fear a lover for whom I should have reason to blush. Thou shalt be virtuous, or be despised ; I will be respected, or be myself again : it is the only hope I have left, preferable to the hope of death.

## L E T T E R V.

TO ELOISA.

C E L E S T I A L powers ! I possessed a soul capable of affliction : O inspire me with one that can bear felicity ! Divine love ! spirit of my existence, O support me ! for I sink down oppressed with extacy. How inexpressible are the charms of virtue ! How invincible the power of a beloved object ! fortune, pleasure, transport, how poignant your impression ! O, how shall I withstand the rapid torrent of bliss which overflows my heart, and how dispel the apprehensions of a timorous maid ? Eloisa—no ! my Eloisa on her knees ! my Eloisa weep !——Shall she to whom the universe should bend supplicate the man who adores her to be careful of her honour, and to preserve his own ? Were it possible for me to be out of humour with you, I should be a little angry at your fears : they are disgraceful to us both. Learn, thou chaste and heavenly beauty, to know better the nature of thy empire. If I adore thy charming person, is it not for the purity of that soul by which it is animated, and which bears such ineffable marks of its divine origin ? You tremble with apprehension ! good God ! what hath she to fear, who stamps with reverence and honour every sentiment she inspires ? Is there a man upon earth who could be vile enough to offer the least insult to such virtue ?

Permit,

Permit, O permit me, to enjoy the unexpected happiness of being beloved——beloved by such——Ye princes of the world, I now look down upon your grandeur. Let me read a thousand and a thousand times that enchanting epistle where thy tender sentiments are painted in such strong and glowing colours; where I observe with transport, notwithstanding the violent agitation of thy soul, that even the most lively passions of a noble heart never lose sight of virtue. What monster, after having read that affecting letter, could take advantage of your generous confession, and attempt a crime which must infallibly make him wretched and despicable even to himself. No, my dearest Eloisa, there can be nothing to fear from a friend, a lover, who must ever be incapable of deceiving you. Though I should entirely have lost my reason, though the discomposure of my senses should hourly increase, your person will always appear to me, not only the most beautiful, but the most sacred deposit with which mortal was ever entrusted. My passion, like its object, is unalterably pure. The horrid idea of incest does not shock me more than the thought of polluting your heavenly charms with a sacrilegious touch: you are not more inviolably safe with your own parent than with your lover. If ever that happy lover should in your presence forget himself but for a moment O, 'tis impossible. When I am no longer in love with virtue, my love for Eloisa must expire :  
on

on my first offense, withdraw your affection, and cast me off for ever.

By the purity of our mutual tenderness, therefore, I conjure you, banish all suspicion. Why should your fear exceed the passions of your lover! To what greater felicity can I aspire, when that with which I am blest is already more than I am well able to support? We are both young, and in love unexperienced, it is true; but is that honour which conducts us a deceitful guide? can that experience be needful which is acquired only from vice? I am strangely deceived, if the principles of rectitude are not rooted in the bottom of my heart. In truth, my Eloisa, I am no vile seducer, as, in your despair, you were pleased to call me; but am artless, and of great sensibility, easily discovering my feelings, but feeling nothing at which I ought to blush. To say all in one word, my love for Eloisa is not greater than my abhorrence of a crime. I am even doubtful, whether the love which you inspire be not in its nature incompatible with vice; and whether a corrupt heart could possibly feel its influence. As for me, the more I love you, the more exalted are my sentiments. Can there be any degree of virtue, however unattainable for its own sake, to which I would not aspire to become more worthy of Eloisa?

LETTER

## L E T T E R VI.

ELOISA TO CLARA.

**I**S my dear cousin resolved to spend her whole life in bewailing her poor Challiot, and will she forget the living because of the dead? I sympathise in your grief and think it just, but shall it therefore be eternal? Since the death of your mother she was assiduously careful of your education; she was your friend rather than your governess. She loved you with great tenderness, and me, for your sake: her instructions were all intended to enrich our hearts with principles of honour and virtue. All this I know, my dear, and acknowledge it with gratitude; but, confess with me also, that in some respects she acted very imprudently; that she often indiscretely told us things with which we had no concern; that she entertained us eternally with maxims of gallantry, her own juvenile adventures, the management of amours; and that to avoid the snares of men, though she might tell us not to give ear to their protestations, yet she certainly instructed us in many things with which there was no necessity for young girls to be made acquainted. Reflect, therefore, upon her death as a misfortune, not without some consolation. To girls of our age her lessons grew dangerous, and who knows but heaven may have taken her from us the very moment in which her removal became necessary to our future happiness. Re-

member the salutary advice you gave me when I was deprived of the best of brothers. Was Challiot dearer to you? Is your loss greater than mine?

Return, my dear; she has no longer any occasion for you. Alas! whilst you are wasting your time in superfluous affliction, may not your absence be productive of greater evils? Why are you not afraid, who know the beatings of my heart, to abandon your friend to misfortunes which your presence might prevent. O Clara! strange things have happened since your departure. You will tremble to hear the danger to which I have been exposed by my imprudence. Thank heaven, I hope I have now nothing to fear: but unhappily I am as it were at the mercy of another. You alone can restore me to myself: haste, therefore, to my assistance. So long as your attendance was of service to poor Challiot I was silent; I should even have been the first to exhort you to such an act of benevolence: but, now she is no more, her family are become the objects of your charity: of this obligation we could better acquit ourselves if we were together, and your gratitude might be discharged without neglecting your friend.

Since my father took his leave of us we have resumed our former manner of living. My mother leaves me less frequently alone; not that she has any suspicion. Her visits employ more time than it would be proper for me to spare from my little studies, and in her absence Bab  
fills

fills her place but negligently. Now, though I do not think my good mother sufficiently watchful, I cannot resolve to tell her so. I would willingly provide for my own safety without losing her esteem, and you alone are capable of managing this matter. Return, then, my dear Clara, pr'ythee return. I regret every lesson at which you are not present, and am fearful of becoming too learned. Our preceptor is not only a man of great merit, but of exemplary virtue; and therefore more dangerous. I am too well satisfied with him to be so with myself. For with girls of our age, it is always safer to be two than one, be the man ever so virtuous.

---

## L E T T E R VII.

## A N S W E R.

**I** Understand, and tremble for you: not that I think your danger so great as your imagination would suggest. Your fears make me less apprehensive for the present; but I am terrified with the thought of what may hereafter happen. Should you be unable to conquer your passion, what will become of you! Alas, poor Challiot, how often has she foretold that your first sigh would mark your fortune. Ah! Eloisa, so young, and thy destiny already accomplished? Much I fear we shall find the want of that sensible woman, whom, in your opinion, we have lost for our advantage. Sure I am, it would be advantageous



advantageous for us to fall into still safer hands ; but she has made us too knowing to be governed by another, yet not sufficiently so to govern ourselves: she only was able to shield us from the danger to which, by her indiscretion, we are exposed. She was extremely communicative, and, considering our age, we ourselves seem to have thought pretty deeply. The ardent and tender friendship which had united us, almost from our cradles, expanded our hearts, and ripened them into sensibility perhaps a little premature. We are not ignorant of the passions, as to their symptoms and effects; the art of suppressing them seems to be all we want. Heaven grant that our young philosopher may know this art better than we.

By *we* you know who I mean: for my part, Challiot used always to say, that my giddiness would be my security in the place of reason, that I should never have sense enough to be in love, and that I was too constantly foolish to be guilty of a great folly. My dear Eloisa, be careful of yourself! the better she thought of your understanding, the more she was apprehensive of your heart. Nevertheless, let not your courage sink. Your prudence and your honour, I am certain, will exert their utmost, and I assure you, on my part, that friendship shall do every thing in its power. If we are too knowing for our years, yet our manners have been hitherto spotless and irreproachable. Believe me, my dear, there are many girls, who,  
though

though they may have more simplicity, have less virtue than ourselves: we know what virtue means, and are virtuous by choice; and that seems to me the most secure.

And yet, from what you have told me, I shall not enjoy a moment's repose till we meet; for, if you are really afraid, your danger is not entirely chimerical. It is true, the means of preservation are very obvious. One word to your mother, and the thing is done: but I understand you; the expedient is too conclusive: you would willingly be assured of not being vanquished, without losing the honour of having sustained the combat. Alas! my poor cousin—if there was the least glimmering——Baron d'E-tange consent to give his daughter, his only child, to the son of an inconsiderable tradesman without fortune! Dost thou presume to hope he will?—or what dost thou hope?—what wouldst thou have? poor Eloisa!—Fear nothing, however, on my account. Your friend will keep your secret. Many people might think it more honest to reveal it—perhaps they are right. For my part, who am no great casuist, I have no notion of that honesty which is incompatible with confidence, faith, and friendship. I imagine that every relation, every age, hath its peculiar maxims, duties, and virtues; but what might be prudence in another, in me would be perfidy; and that to confound these things, would more probably make us wicked, than wise and happy. If your love be weak, we will  
overcome

overcome it; but, if it be extreme, violent measures may produce a tragical catastrophe, and friendship will attempt nothing for which it cannot be answerable. After all, I flatter myself that I shall have little reason to complain of your conduct when I have you once under my eye. You shall see what it is to have a duenna of eighteen!

You know, my dear girl, that I am not absent upon pleasure; and really the country is not so agreeable in the spring as you imagine: one suffers at this time both heat and cold; for the trees afford us no shade, and in the house it is too cold to live without fire. My father too, in the midst of his building, begins to perceive that the gazette comes later hither than to town; so that we all wish to return, and I hope to embrace you in a few days. But what causes my inquietude is, that a few days make I know not what number of hours, many of which are destined to the philosopher—to the philosopher, cousin! you understand me. Remember that the clock strikes those hours entirely for him!

Do not blush, my dear girl, turn down your eyes, or look grave: your features will not suffer it. You know I never, in my life, could weep without laughing, and yet I have not less sensibility than other people: I do not feel our separation less severely, nor am I less afflicted with the loss of poor Challiot. Her family I am resolved never to abandon, and I sincerely thank my kind friend for her promise to assist me: but  
to

to let slip an opportunity of doing good were to be no more myself. I confess the good creature was rather too talkative, free enough on certain occasions, a little indiscrete with young girls, and that she was fond of old stories and times past: so that I do not so much regret the qualities of her mind, though, among some bad ones, many of them were excellent: the loss which I chiefly deplore is the goodness of her heart, and that mixture of maternal and sisterly affection, which made her inexpressibly dear to me. My mother I scarce knew; I am indeed beloved by my father as much as it is possible for him to love: your amiable brother is no more; and I very seldom see my own. Thus am I left alone, almost desolate, as an orphan. You are my only consolation. Yes, my Eloisa lives, and I will weep no more!

*P. S.* For fear of an accident, I shall direct this letter to our preceptor.

## \* L E T T E R VIII.

TO ELOISA.

**O** My fair Eloisa, what a strange capricious deity is Love! My present felicity seems far to exceed my most sanguine expectations, and yet

\* It is plain there is a chasm here, and the reader will find many in the course of this correspondence. Several of the letters are lost, others are suppressed, and some have been curtailed; but there appears to be nothing wanting essential to the story.

yet I am discontented. You love me, you confess your passion, and yet I sigh. My presumptuous heart dares to wish still farther, though all my wishes are gratified. I am punished with its wild imaginations; they render me unhappy in the very bosom of felicity. Do not, however, believe that I have forgotten the laws you have imposed, or lost the power of obedience: no; but I am displeased to find the observance of those laws irksome to me alone; that you, who not long ago was all imbecillity, are now become so great a heroine; and that you are so excessively careful to prevent every proof of my integrity.

How you are changed, and *you* alone, within these two months! Where is now your langour, your disgust, your dejected look? The graces have again resumed their post; your charms are all returned; the new blown rose is not more fresh and blooming; you have recovered your vivacity and wit; you rally, even me, as formerly; but what hurts me more than all this, is, that you swear eternal fidelity with as much gaiety and good-humour as if it were something droll or indifferent.

O, my fair inconstant! is this the characteristic of an ungovernable passion? If you were in any degree, at war with your inclinations, would not the constraint throw a damp upon your enjoyments? O, how infinitely more amiable you were, when less beautiful! How do I regret that pathetick paleness, that precious assurance  
of

of a lover's happiness, and hate that sprightly health which you have recovered at the expense of my repose! Yes, I could be much better satisfied with your indisposition, than with that air of content, those sparkling eyes, that blooming complexion, which conspire to insult me. Have you already forgot the time when you were glad to sue for mercy? O, Eloisa! the violent tempest hath been very suddenly allayed.

But what vexes me most, is, that, after having committed yourself entirely to my honour, you should seem apprehensive and mistrustful where there is no danger. Is it thus I am rewarded for my discretion? Does my inviolable respect deserve to be thus affronted? Your father's absence is so far from giving you more liberty, that it is now almost impossible to find you alone. Your *constant* cousin never leaves you a moment. I find we are insensibly returning to our former circumspection, with this difference only, what was then irksome to you is now become matter of amusement.

What recompense can I expect for the purity of my adoration, if not your esteem? And to what purpose have I abstained even from the least indulgence, if it produces no gratitude? In short, I am weary of suffering ineffectually, and of living in a state of continued self-denial, without being allowed the merit of it. I cannot bear to be despised whilst you are growing every day more beautiful. Why am I to gaze eternally on those delicious fruits which my lips dare not touch?

touch? Must I relinquish all hope, without the satisfaction of a voluntary sacrifice? No, since you depend no longer upon my honour, it stands released from its vain engagements; your own precautions are sufficient. You are ungrateful, and I am too scrupulous; but for the future I am resolved not to reject the happiness which fortune, in spite of you, may throw in my way. Be it as it will, I find that I have taken upon me a charge that is above my capacity. Eloisa, you are once more your own guardian. I must resign the deposit which I cannot preserve without being tempted to a breach of faith, and which you yourself are able to secure with less difficulty than you were pleased to imagine.

I speak seriously! depend upon your own strength, else banish me, or, in other words, deprive me of existence. The promise I made was rash and inconsiderate; and I am amazed how I have been able to keep it so long. I confess it ought to remain for ever inviolable; but of that I now perceive the impossibility. He who wantonly exposes his virtue to such severe trials deserves to fall. Believe me, fairest among women! that you will always be honoured and respected by him who valued life only on your account? but reason may forsake me, and my intoxicated senses may hint the perpetration of a crime, which, in my cooler hours, I should abhor. I am, however, happy in the reflexion that I have not hitherto abused your confidence. Two whole months have I triumphed over  
myself;

myself; but I am entitled to the reward due to as many ages of torment.

---

## L E T T E R IX.

FROM ELOISA.

**I** Comprehend you: the pleasures of vice, and the reward of virtue, would just constitute the felicity you wish to enjoy. Are these your morals? Truly, my good friend, your generosity was of short duration. Is it possible that it could be entirely the effect of art? There is something ludicrous, however, in complaining of my health. Was it that you hoped to see it entirely destroyed by my ridiculous passion, and expected to have me at your feet, imploring your pity to save my life? or did you treat me with respect whilst I continued frightful, with an intention to retract your promise as soon as I should in any degree become an object of desire?—I see nothing so vastly meritorious in such a sacrifice.

With equal justice, you are pleased to reproach me for the care I have lately taken to prevent those painful combats with yourself, when in reality you ought to deem it an obligation. You then retract your engagement, on account of its being too burthensome a duty; so that in the same breath you complain of having too much and of not having enough to do. Recollect yourself a little, and endeavour to be more consistent, that your pretended sufferings may have



a less frivolous appearance: or perhaps it would be more adviseable to put off that dissimulation which is inconsistent with your character. Say what you will, your heart is much better satisfied with mine than you would have me think. Ungrateful man! you are but too well acquainted with its feelings. Even your own letter contradicts you by the gaiety of its stile: you would not have so much wit if you had less tranquillity. But enough of vain reproach to you: let me now reproach myself: it will probably be with more reason.

The content and serenity with which I have been blessed of late is inconsistent with my former declaration, and I confess you have cause to be surpris'd at the contrast. You were then a witness to my despair, and you now behold in me too much tranquillity; hence you pronounce me inconstant and capricious. Be not, my good friend, too severe in your judgement. This heart of mine cannot be known in one day. Have patience, and, in time, you may probably discover it to be not unworthy your regard.

Unless you were sensible how much I was shocked when I first detected my heart in its passion for you, it is impossible to form any idea of what I suffered. The maxims I imbibed in my education were so extremely severe, that love, however pure, seemed highly criminal. I was taught to believe that a young girl of sensibility was ruined the moment she suffered a  
tender

tender expression to pass her lips: my disordered imagination confounded the crime with the confession of my love, and I had conceived so terrible an idea of the first step, that I saw little or no interval between that and the last. An extreme diffidence of myself increased the alarm; the struggles of modesty appeared to be those of virtue; and the uneasiness of silence seemed the importunity of desire. The moment I had spoke I concluded myself lost beyond redemption; and yet I must have spoken or have parted with you for ever. Thus, unable to disguise my sentiments, I endeavoured to excite your generosity, and, depending rather upon you than on myself, I chose to engage your honour in my defense, as I could have little reliance on a resource of which I believed myself already deprived.

I soon discovered my error: I had scarce opened my mind when I found myself much easier; the instant I received your answer I became perfectly calm; and two months experience has informed me that my too tender heart hath need of love, but that my passions can rest satisfied without a lover. Now, judge, you who are a lover of virtue, what joy I must have felt at this discovery. Emerged from the profound ignominy into which my fears had plunged me, I now taste the delicious pleasure of a guiltless passion: it constitutes all my happiness: it hath had an influence on my temper and health: I can conceive no paradise on earth equal to the union of love and innocence.

I feared you no longer; and when I endeavoured to avoid being alone with you, it was rather for your sake than my own. Your eyes, your sighs, betrayed more transport than prudence: but though *you* had forgotten the bounds you yourself prescribed, *I* should not.

Alas, my friend, I wish I could communicate to you that tranquillity of soul which I now enjoy! Would it were in my power to teach you to be contented and happy! What fear, what shame can embitter our felicity? In the bosom of love we might talk of virtue without a blush,

*E v'è il piacer con l'onestade accanto.*

And taste the pleasures innocence bestows.

And yet a strange foreboding whispers to my heart, that these are the only days of happiness allotted us by heaven. Our future prospect presents nothing to my view, but absence, anxiety, dangers, and difficulties. The least change in our present situation must necessarily be for the worse. Were we even united for ever, I am not certain whether our happiness would not be destroyed by its excess; the moment of possession is a dangerous crisis.

I conjure thee, my kind, my only friend, to endeavour to calm the turbulence of those vain desires, which are always followed by regret, repentance, and sorrow. Let us peaceably enjoy our present felicity. You have a pleasure in giving me instruction, and you know but too well with what delight I listen to be instructed. Let your lessons be yet more frequent, that we  
may

may be as little asunder as decency will allow. Our absent moments shall be employed in writing to each other, and thus none of the precious time will pass in vain, which one day possibly we might give the world to recal. Would to heaven that our present happiness might end only with our lives! To improve one's understanding, to adorn one's mind, indulge one's heart: can there possibly be any addition to our felicity?

---

## L E T T E R X.

T O E L O I S A.

**H**OW entirely was my Eloisa in the right when she said that I did not yet know her sufficiently! I constantly flatter myself that I have discovered every excellence of her soul, when new beauties daily meet my observation. What woman, but yourself, could ever unite virtue and tenderness, so as to add new charms to both? In spite of myself I am forced to admire and approve that prudence which deprives me of all comfort, and there is something so excessively engaging in the manner of imposing your prohibitions, that I almost receive them with delight.

I am every day more positive that there is no happiness equal to that of being beloved by Eloisa; and so entirely am I of this opinion that I would not prefer even the person of Eloisa to the possession

her heart. But, why this bitter alternative? Can things be incompatible which are united in nature? Our time, you say, is precious; let us enjoy our good fortune without troubling its pure stream with our impatience. Be it so: but shall we, because we are moderately happy, reject supreme felicity? Is not all that time lost which might have been better employed? If it were possible to live a thousand years in one quarter of an hour, what purpose would it answer to tell over the tedious numbers of days as they passed?

Your opinion of our present situation is very just: I am convinced I ought to be happy, and yet I am much the reverse. The dictates of wisdom may continue to flow from your lips, but the voice of nature is stronger than your's: and how can we avoid listening to her, when she speaks the language of our own hearts? Of all sublunary things, I know of nothing, except yourself, which deserves a moment's attention. Without you, nature would have no allurements: her empire is in your charms, and there she is irresistible.

Your heart, divine Eloisa, feels none of this. You are content to ravish our senses, and are not at war with your own. It should seem that your soul is too sublime for human passions, and that you have not only the beauty but the purity of angels—a purity which murmuring I revere, and to which I would gladly aspire. But, no: I am condemned to creep upon the earth, and to behold

behold Eloisa a constellation in the heavens. O ! may you continue to be happy though I am wretched ! enjoy your virtues ; and perdition catch the vile mortal who shall ever attempt to tarnish one of them ! Yes, my Eloisa, be happy, and I will endeavour to forget my own misery, in the recollection of your bliss. If I know my heart, my love is as spotless as its adorable object. The passions which your charms have enflamed are extinguished by the purity of your soul : I dare not disturb its serenity. Whenever I am tempted to take the least liberty, I find myself restrained rather by the dread of interrupting your peace of mind, than by the fear of offending. In my pursuit of happiness, I have considered only in what degree it might affect my Eloisa ; and, finding it incompatible with her's, I can be wretched without repining.

With what inexplicable, jarring sentiments you have inspired me ! I am at once submissive and daring, mild and impetuous. Your looks inflame my heart with love, and when I hear your voice I am captivated with the charms of innocence. If ever I presume to indulge a wishful idea, it is in your absence. Your image in my mind is the only object of my passionate adoration.

And yet I languish and consume away ; my blood is all on fire, and every attempt to damp the flame serves but to increase its fervour. Still I have cause to think myself very happy ; and so I do. Surely I have little reason to complain,

when I would not change my situation with the greatest monarch upon earth. But yet some fiend torments me, whose pursuits it is impossible to elude. Methinks I would not die, and yet I am daily expiring; for you only I wish to live, and you alone are the cause of my death.

---

## L E T T E R XI.

FROM ELOISA.

**M**Y attachment to my dear friend grows every day stronger; your absence becomes insupportable, and I have no relief but in my pen. Thus, my love keeps pace with your's; for I judge of your passion by your real fear of offending: your former fears were only feigned with an intent to advance your cause. It is an easy matter to distinguish the dictates of an afflicted heart from the frenzy of a heated imagination, and I see a thousand times more affection in your present constraint than in your former delirium. I know also that your situation, restrained as it is, is not wholly bereft of pleasure. A sincere lover must be very happy in making frequent sacrifices to a grateful mistress, when he is assured that not one of them will be forgotten, but that she will treasure the remembrance in her heart.

But who knows whether, presuming on my sensibility, this may not be a deeper, and therefore a more dangerous plot than the former? O,  
no!

no! the suspicion was unjust; you certainly cannot mean to deceive me: and yet prudence tells me to be more suspicious of compassion than even of love; for I find myself more affected by your respect than by all your transport: so that, as you are grown more honest, you are become in proportion more formidable.

In the overflowing of my heart I will tell you a truth, of which your own feelings cannot fail to convince you: it is, that in spite of fortune, parents, and of ourselves, our fates are united for ever, and we can be only happy or miserable together. Our souls, if I may use the expression, touch in all points, and we feel an entire coherence: correct me if I speak unphilosophically. Our destiny may part us, but cannot disunite us. Henceforward our pains and pleasures must be mutual; and, like the magnets, of which I have heard you speak, that have the same motion though in different places, we should have the same sensations at the two extremities of the world.

Banish, therefore, the vain hope, if you ever entertained it, of exclusive happiness to be purchased at the expense of mine. Do not flatter yourself with the idle prospect of felicity founded upon Eloisa's dishonour, or imagine that you could behold my ignominy and my tears without horror. Believe me, my dear friend, I know your heart better than yourself. A passion so tender and so true cannot possibly excite an impure desire; but we are so attached, that if we



were on the brink of perdition it would be impossible for us to fall singly; of my ruin your's is the inevitable consequence.

I should be glad to convince you how necessary it is for us both that I should be entrusted with the care of our destiny. Can you doubt that you are as dear to me as myself, or that I can enjoy any happiness exclusive of your's? No, my dear friend, our interest is exactly the same, but I have rather more at stake, and have therefore more reason to be watchful. I own I am youngest; but did you never observe that if reason be generally weaker, and sooner apt to decay in our sex, it also comes more early to maturity than in your's? as in vegetation the most feeble plants arrive soonest at their perfection and dissolution. We find ourselves, from our first conception of things, entrusted with so valuable a treasure, that our dread of consequences soon unfolds our judgement, and an early sense of our danger excites our vigilance.

In short, the more I reflect upon our situation, the more I am convinced that love and reason join in my request: suffer yourself, then, to be led by the gentle deity: for, though he is blind, he is not an useless guide.

I am not quite certain that this language of my heart will be perfectly intelligible to your's, or that my letter will be read with the same emotion with which it was written: nor am I convinced that particular objects will ever appear to us in the same light; but certain I am, that  
the

the advice of either which tends least towards separate happiness, is that which we ought to follow.

---

## L E T T E R XII.

TO ELOISA.

**O** My Eloisa, how pathetick is the language of nature! How plainly do I perceive in your last letter the serenity of innocence, and the sollicitude of love! Your sentiments are expressed without art or trouble, and convey a more delicate sensation to the mind than all the refined periods of studied elocution. Your reasons are incontrovertible, but urged with such an air of simplicity, that they seem less cogent at first than they really are; and your manner of expressing the sublimest sentiments is so natural and easy, that without reflexion one is apt to mistake them for common opinions.

Yes, my Eloisa, the care of our destiny shall be entirely your's: not because it is your right, but as your duty, and as a piece of justice I expect from your judgement, for the injury you have done to mine. From this moment to the end of my life, I resign myself to your will; dispose of me as of one who hath no interest of his own, and whose existence hath no connexion but with you. Doubt not that I will fly from my resolution, be the terms you impose ever so rigorous; for though I myself should profit nothing by my obedience, if it adds but one jot to your felicity I am sufficiently rewarded..

D 6

Therefore:

Therefore, I relinquish to you, without reserve, the entire care of our common happiness : secure but your own and I will be satisfied. As for me, who can neither forget you a single moment, nor think of you without forbidden emotion, I will now give my whole attention to the employment you were pleased to assign me.

It is now just a year since we began our studies, and hitherto they have been directed partly by chance, rather with a design to consult your taste than to improve it. Besides, our hearts were too much fluttered to leave us the perfect use of our senses. Our eyes wandered from the book, and our lips pronounced words, without any ideas. I remember, your arch cousin, whose mind was unengaged, used frequently to reproach us with want of conception ; she seemed delighted to leave us behind, and soon grew more knowing than her preceptor. Now, though we have sometimes smiled at her pretensions, she is really the only one of the three who retains any part of our reading.

But, to retrieve, in some degree, the time we have lost (Ah ! Eloisa, was ever time more happily spent ?) I have formed a kind of plan, which may possibly, by the advantage of method, in some measure compensate our neglect. I send it you enclosed ; we will read it together ; at present I shall only make a few general observations on the subject.

If, my charming friend, we were inclined to parade with our learning, and to study for the world rather than for ourselves, my system would be  
be

be a bad one; for it tends only to extract a little from a vast multiplicity of things, and from a large library to select a small number of books.

Science, in general, may be considered as a coin of great value, but of use to the possessor only in as much as it is communicated to others; it is valuable but as a commodity in traffick. Take from the learned the pleasure of being heard, and their love of knowledge would vanish. They do not study to obtain wisdom, but the reputation of it: philosophy would have no charms if the philosopher had no admirers. For our parts, who have no design but to improve our minds, it will be most adviseable to read little and think much; or, which is better, frequently to talk over the subjects on which we have been reading. I am of opinion, when once the understanding is a little developed by reflexion, it is better to reason for ourselves than to depend upon books for the discovery of truth; for by that means it will make a much stronger impression: whilst on the contrary, by taking things for granted, we view objects by halves, and in a borrowed light. We are born rich, says Montagne, and yet our whole education consists in borrowing. We are taught to accumulate continually, and, like true misers, we choose rather to use the wealth of other men, than break into our own store.

I confess there are many people whom the method I propose would not suit, who ought to *read much and think little*, because every borrowed reflexion

reflexion is better than any thing they could have produced. But I recommend the contrary to you, who improve upon every book you read. Let us, therefore, mutually communicate our ideas; I will relate the opinions of others, then you shall tell me your's upon the same subject, and thus shall I frequently gather more instruction from our lecture than yourself.

The more we contract our circle, the more necessary it is to be circumspect in the choice of our authours. The grand error of young students, as I told you before, is a too implicit dependence upon books, and too much diffidence in their own capacity; without reflecting that they are much less liable to be misled by their own reason, than by the sophistry of systematical writers. If we would but consult our own feelings, we should easily distinguish *virtue* and *beauty*: we do not want to be taught either of these: but examples of extreme virtue and superlative beauty are less common, and these are therefore more difficult to be understood. Our vanity leads us to mistake our own weakness for that of nature, and to think those qualities chimerical which we do not perceive within ourselves; idleness and vice rest upon pretended impossibility, and men of little genius conclude that things which are uncommon have no existence. These errors we must endeavour to eradicate, and, by using ourselves to contemplate grand objects, destroy the notion of their impossibility: thus, by degrees, our emulation  
is.

is roused by example, our taste refines, and every thing indifferent becomes intolerable.

But let us not have recourse to books for principles which may be found within ourselves. What have we to do with the idle disputes of philosophers concerning virtue and happiness? Let us rather employ that time in being virtuous and happy which others waste in fruitless enquiries after the means: let us rather imitate great examples, than busy ourselves with systems and opinions.

I always believed, that virtue was in reality active beauty; or at least that they were intimately connected, and sprang from the same source in nature. From this idea it follows, that wisdom and taste are to be improved by the same means, and that a mind truly sensible of the charms of virtue must receive an equal impression from every other kind of beauty. Yet, accurate and refined perceptions are to be acquired only by habit; and hence it is, that we see a painter, in viewing a fine prospect or a good picture, in raptures at certain objects, which a common observer would not even have seen. How many real impressions do we perceive, which we cannot account for? How many *Je-ne-sais-quois* frequently occur, which taste only can determine? Taste is, in some degree, the microscope of judgement; it brings small objects to our view, and its operations begin where those of judgement end. How then shall we proceed in its cultivation? By exercising our sight as well

well as feeling, and by judging of the beautiful from inspection, as we judge of virtue from sensation. I am persuaded there may be some hearts upon which the first sight even of *Eloisa* would make no impression.

For this reason, my lovely scholar, I limit your studies to books of taste and manners. For this reason, changing my precepts into examples, I shall give you no other definitions of virtue than the pictures of virtuous men; nor other rules for writing well, than books which are well written.

Be not surprised that I have thus contracted the circle of your studies; it will certainly render them more useful: I am convinced, by daily experience, that all instruction which tends not to improve the mind is not worthy your attention. We will dismiss the languages, except the Italian, which you understand and admire. We will discard our elements of algebra and geometry. We would even quit our philosophy, were it not for the utility of its terms. We will, for ever, renounce modern history, except that of our own country, and that only on account of our liberty, and the ancient simplicity of our manners: for let nobody persuade you that the history of one's own country is the most interesting—it is false. The history of some countries will not even bear reading. The most interesting history is, that which furnishes the most examples, manners, and characters; in a word, the most instruction. We are told that

we

we possess all these in as great a degree as the ancients; but, turn to their histories, and you will be convinced that this is also a mistake.

There are people, whose faces are so unmeaning, that the best painter cannot catch their likeness, and there are governments so uncharacteristick as to want no historian; but able historians will never be wanting where there is matter deserving the pen of a good writer. In short, they tell us that men are alike in all ages, that their virtues and vices are the same, and that we admire the ancients only because they are ancients. This is also false—in former times great effects were produced by trifling causes, but in our days it is just the reverse. The ancients were contemporary with their historians, and yet we have learnt to admire them: should posterity ever admire our modern historians, they certainly will not have grounded their opinion upon our's.

Out of regard to our *constant companion* I consent to a few volumes of belles-lettres, which I should not have recommended to you. Except Petrarch, Tasso, Metastasio, and the best French theatrical authours, I leave you none of those amorous poets, which are the common amusement of your sex. The most inspired of them all cannot teach us to love? Ah! Eloisa, we are better instructed by our own hearts! The phrases borrowed from books are cold and insipid to us who speak the language of our souls. It is a kind of reading which cramps the imagination; enervates



enervates the mind, and dims its original brightness. On the contrary, real love influences all our sentiments, and animates them with new vigour.

---

## L E T T E R XIII.

FROM ELOISA.

**I** Told you we were happy, and nothing proves it more than the uneasiness we feel upon the least change in our situation: if it were not true, why should two days separation give us so much pain? I say *us*, for I know my friend shares my impatience; he feels my uneasiness; and is unhappy upon his own account: but, to tell me this were now superfluous.

We have been in the country since last night only; the hour is not yet come in which I should see you if I were in town; and yet this distance makes me already find your absence almost insupportable. If you had not prohibited geometry, I should say that my inquietude increases in a compound ratio of the intervals of time and space; so sensible am I that the pain of absence is increased by distance. I have brought with me your letter, and your plan of study, for my meditation; I have read the first already twice over, and own I was a good deal affected with the conclusion. I perceive, my dear friend, that your passion deserves the name of real love, because you still preserve your sense of honour, and are capable of sacrificing every thing to  
virtue.

virtue. To delude a woman in the disguise of her preceptor is surely, of all the wiles of seduction, the most unpardonable; and he must have very little resource in himself, who would attempt to move his mistress by the assistance of romance. If you had availed yourself of philosophy to forward your designs, or if you had endeavoured to establish maxims favourable to your interest, those very methods of deceit would soon have undeceived me; but you have more honesty, and are therefore more dangerous. From the first moment I perceived in my heart the least spark of love, and the desire of a lasting attachment, I petitioned heaven to unite me to a man whose soul was rather amiable than his person; for well I knew the charms of the mind were least liable to disgust, and that probity and honour adorn every sentiment of the heart. I chose with propriety, and therefore, like Solomon, I have obtained, not only what I asked for, but also what I did not ask. I look upon this as a good omen, and I do not despair but I shall, one day, have it in my power to make my dear friend as happy as he deserves. We have indeed many obstacles to surmount, and the expedients are slow, doubtful, and difficult. I dare not flatter myself too much: be assured, however, that nothing shall be forgotten which the united efforts of love and patience can accomplish. Mean while, continue to humour my mother, and prepare yourself for the return of father, who at last retires, after thirty years services.

vices. You must learn to endure the haughtiness of a haughty old gentleman, jealous of his honour, who will love you without flattering, and esteem you without many professions.

I broke off here to take a ramble in the neighbouring woods. You, my amiable friend—you were my companion—or rather I carried you in my heart. I sought those paths which I imagined we should have trod, and marked the shades which seemed worthy to receive us, The delightful solitude of the groves seemed to heighten our sensibility, and the woods themselves appeared to receive additional beauty from the presence of two such faithful lovers.

Amidst the natural bowers of this charming place, there is one still more beautiful than the rest, with which I am most delighted, and where for that reason I intend to surprise you. It must not be said that I want generosity to reward your constant respect. I would convince you, in spite of vulgar opinions, that voluntary favours are more valuable than those obtained by importunity. But, lest the strength of your imagination should lead you too far, I must inform you, that we will not visit these pleasant bowers without my *constant companion*.

Now I have mentioned my cousin, I am determined, if it does not displease you, that you shall accompany her hither on Monday next. You must not fail to be with her at ten o'clock. My mother's chaise will be there about that time; you shall spend the whole day with us,  
and

and we will return all together the next day after dinner.

I had written so far when I bethought myself, that I have not the same opportunity here, for the conveyance of my letter, as in town. I once had an inclination to send you one of your books by Gustin the gardener's son, and so enclose my letter in the cover : but as there is a possibility that you may not be aware of this contrivance, it would be unpardonably imprudent to risk our all on so precarious a bottom. I must, therefore, be contented to signify the intended rendezvous on Monday by a billet, and I myself will give you this letter. Besides, I was a little apprehensive lest you might comment too freely on the mystery of the bower.

---

#### L E T T E R   X I V .

T O   E L O I S A .

**A** H ! Eloisa, Eloisa ! what have you done ? You meant to reward me, and you are the cause of my ruin—I am intoxicated, or, rather, I am mad—My brains are turned—all my senses are disordered by this fatal kiss. You designed to alleviate my pain ; but you have cruelly increased my torment. The poison I have imbibed from your lips will destroy me—my blood boils within my veins—I shall die, and your pity will but hasten my death.

O im-

O immortal remembrance of that illusive, frantick, and enchanting moment! Never, never to be effaced so long as Eloisa lives within my soul.—Till my heart is deprived of all sensation, thou wilt continue to be the happiness and torment of my life!

Alas! I possessed an apparent tranquillity; resigned myself entirely to your supreme will, and never murmured at the fate you condescended to prescribe. I had conquered the impetuous sallies of my imagination—I disguised my looks, and put a lock upon my heart—I but half expressed my desires, and was as content as possible. Thus your billet found me, and I flew to your cousin: we arrived at *Clarens*; my heart beat quick at the sight of my beloved Eloisa; her sweet voice caused a strange emotion; I became almost transported, and it was lucky for me that your cousin was present to engage your mother's attention. We rambled in the garden, dined comfortably, you found an opportunity, unperceived, to give me your charming letter, which I durst not open before this formidable witness; the sun began to decline, and we hastened to the woods for the benefit of the shade. Alas! I was quite happy, and I did not even conceive a state of greater bliss.

As we approached the bower, I perceived, not without a secret emotion, your significant winks, your mutual smiles, and the increasing glow in thy charming cheeks. Soon as we entered, I was surpris'd to see your cousin approach

proach me, and with an affected air of humility, ask me for a kiss. Without comprehending the mystery, I complied with her request; and, charming as she is, I never could have had a more convincing proof of the insipidity of those sensations which proceed not from the heart. But what became of me a moment after, when I felt——my hands shook——a gentle tremour——thy balmy lips——my Eloisa's lips——touch, pressed to mine, and myself within her arms? Quicker than lightening a sudden fire darted through my soul: I seemed all over sensible of the ravishing condescension, and my heart sunk down oppressed with insupportable delight, when all at once I perceived your colour change, your eyes close; you leant upon your cousin, and fainted away. Fear extinguished all my joy, and my happiness vanquished like a shadow.

I scarce know any thing that has passed since that fatal moment. The impression it has made on my heart will never be effaced. A favour!——it is an extreme torment——No, keep thy kisses—I cannot bear them——they are too penetrating, too painful——they distract me. I am no more myself, and you appear to me no more the same object. You seem not as formerly chiding and severe; but, methinks I see and feel you lovely and tender as at that happy instant when I pressed you to my bosom. O Eloisa! whatever may be the consequence of my ungovernable passion, use me as severely as you please,  
I can-

I cannot exist in my present condition, and I perceive I must at last expire at your feet—or in your arms.

---

## L E T T E R XV.

FROM ELOISA.

**I**T is necessary, my dear friend, that we should part for some time: I ask it as the first proof of that obedience you have so often promised. If I am urgent in my request, you may be assured I have good reason for it: indeed I have, and you are too well convinced that I must, to be able to take this resolution; for your part you will be satisfied since it is my desire.

You have long talked of taking a journey into Valais. I wish you would determine to go before the approach of the winter. Autumn, in this country, still wears a mild and serene aspect; but you see the tops of the mountains are already white, and six weeks later you should not have my consent to take such a rough journey. Resolve, therefore, to set out to-morrow: you will write to me by the direction which I shall send, and you will give me your's when you arrive at Sion.

You would never acquaint me with the situation of your affairs; but you are not in your own country; your fortune I know is small, and I am persuaded you must diminish it here,  
where

where you stay only on my account. I look upon myself therefore as your purse-bearer, and send you a small matter in the little box, which you must not open before the bearer. I will not anticipate difficulties, and I have too great an esteem for you to believe you capable of making any on this occasion.

I beg you will not return without my permission, and also that you will take no leave of us. You may write to my mother or me, merely to inform us that some unforeseen business requires your presence; that you are obliged to depart immediately; and you may, if you please, send me some directions concerning my studies, till you return. You must be careful to avoid the least appearance of mystery. Adieu, my dear friend, and forget not that you take with you the heart and soul of Eloisa.

---

## LETTER XVI.

### ANSWER.

**E**VERY line of your terrible letter made me shudder. But I will obey you: I have promised, and it is my duty—yes, you shall be obeyed. But you cannot conceive—no, barbarous Eloisa, you will never comprehend how this cruel sacrifice affects my heart. There wanted not the tryal in the bower to increase my sensibility. It was a merciless refinement of  
 VOL. I                      E                      inhumanity.



inhumanity, and I now defy you to make me more miserable.

I return your box unopened. To add ignominy to cruelty is too much : you are, indeed, the mistress of my fate, but not of my honour. I will myself preserve this sacred deposit. Alas ! it is the only treasure I have left ! and I will never part with it so long as I live.

## L E T T E R XVII.

### R E P L Y.

**Y**OUR letter excites my compassion ; it is the only senseless thing you have ever written.

I affront your honour ! I would rather sacrifice my life. Do you believe it possible that I should mean to injure your honour ? Ingrate ! too well thou knowest that for thy sake I had almost sacrificed my own. But, tell me, what is this honour which I have offended ? Ask thy groveling heart, thy indelicate soul. How despicable art thou if thou hast no honour but that which is unknown to Eloisa ! Shall those whose hearts are one scruple to share their possessions ? Shall he who calls himself mine refuse my gifts ? Since when is it become dishonourable to receive from those we love ? But the man is despised whose wants exceed his fortune. Despised ! by whom ? By those abject souls who place their honour in their wealth, and estimate their virtue  
by

by their weight of gold. But, is this the honour of a good man? Is virtue less honourable because it is poor?

Undoubtedly, there are presents which a man of honour ought not to accept; but I must tell you, those are equally dishonourable to the person by whom they are offered; and that what may be given with honour, it cannot be dishonourable to receive: now, my heart is so far from reproaching me with what I did, that it glories in the motive. Nothing can be more despicable than a man whose love and assiduities are bought, except the woman by whom they are purchased. But where two hearts are united, it is so reasonable and just that their fortunes should be in common, that if I have reserved more than my share, I think myself indebted to you for the overplus. If the favours of love are rejected, how shall our hearts express their gratitude?

But, lest you should imagine that in my design to supply your wants I was inattentive to my own, I will give you an indisputable proof of the contrary. Know, then, that the purse which I now return contains double the sum it held before, and that I could have redoubled it if I had pleased. My father gives me a certain allowance, moderate indeed, but which my mother's kindness renders it unnecessary for me to touch. As to my lace and embroidery, they are the produce of my own industry. It is true, I was not always so rich; but, I know not how, my attention to a certain fatal passion

has of late made me neglect a thousand little expensive superfluities; which is another reason why I should dispose of it in this manner: it is but just that you should be humbled as a punishment for the evil you have caused, and that love should expiate the crimes it occasions.

But, to the point. You say your honour will not suffer you to accept my gift. If this be true, I have nothing more to say, and am entirely of opinion that you cannot be too positive in this respect. If, therefore, you can prove this to be the case, I desire it may be done clearly, incontestably, and without evasion; for you know I hate all appearance of sophistry. You may then return the purse; I will receive it without complaining, and you shall hear no more of this affair.

You will be pleased, however, to remember, that I neither like false honour, nor people who are affectedly punctilious. If you return the box without a justification, or if your justification be not satisfactory, we must meet no more. Think of this! Adieu!

## LETTER XVIII.

TO ELOISA.

**I** Received your present—I departed without taking leave, and am now a considerable distance from you. Am I sufficiently obedient? Is your tyranny satisfied?

I can

I can give you no account of my journey ; for I remember nothing more than that I was three days in travelling twenty leagues. Every step I took seemed to tear my soul from my body, and to anticipate the pain of death. I intended to have given you a description of the country through which I passed. Vain project ! I beheld nothing but you, and can describe nothing but Eloisa. The repeated emotions of my heart threw me into a continued distraction : I imagined myself to be where I was not : I had hardly sense enough left to ask or follow my road, and I am arrived at Sion without ever leaving Vevai.

Thus I have discovered the secret of eluding your cruelty, and of seeing you without disobeying your command. No, Eloisa, with all your rigour, it is not in your power to separate me from you entirely. I have dragged into exile but the most inconsiderable part of myself ; my soul must remain with you for ever : with impunity it explores your beauty, dwells in rapture upon every charm ; and I am happier in despite of you than I ever was by your permission.

Unfortunately, I have here some people to visit, and some necessary business to transact. I am least wretched in solitude, where I can employ all my thoughts upon Eloisa, and transport myself to her in imagination. Every employment which calls off my attention is become insupportable. I will hurry over my affairs,

that I may be soon at liberty to wander through the solitary wilds of this delightful country. Since I must not live with you, I will shun all society with mankind.

---

## L E T T E R XIX.

TO ELOISA.

**I** Am now detained here only by your order. Those five days have been more than sufficient to finish my own concerns, if things may be so called in which the heart has no interest: so that now you have no pretence to prolong my exile, unless with design to torment me.

I begin to be very uneasy about the fate of my first letter. It was written and sent by the post immediately upon my arrival, and the direction was exactly copied from that which you transmitted me: I sent you mine with equal care: so that if you had answered me punctually, I must have received your letter before now. Yet this letter does not appear, and there is no possible fatality which I have not supposed to be the cause of its delay. O Eloisa, how many unforeseen accidents may have happened in the space of one week, to dissolve the most perfect union that ever existed! I shudder to think that there are a thousand means to make me miserable, and only one by which I can possibly be happy. Eloisa, is it that I am forgotten! God forbid! that were to be miserable indeed. I

am

am prepared for any other misfortune; but all the powers of my soul sicken at the bare idea of that.

O no! it cannot be: I am convinced my fears are groundless, and yet my apprehensions continue. The bitterness of my misfortunes increases daily; and, as if real evils were not sufficient to depress my soul, my fears supply me with imaginary ones to add weight to the others. At first my grief was much more tolerable. The trouble of a sudden departure, and the journey itself were some sort of dissipation! but this peaceful solitude assembles all my woes. Like a wounded soldier, I felt but little pain till after I had retired from the field.

How often have I laughed at a lover, in romance, bemoaning the absence of his mistress! Little did I imagine that your absence would ever be so intolerable to me! I am now sensible how improper it is for a mind at rest to judge of other men's passions; and how foolish, to ridicule the sensations we have never felt. I must confess, however; I have great consolation in reflecting that I suffer by your command. The sufferings which you are pleased to ordain are much less painful than if they were inflicted by the hand of fortune; if they give you any satisfaction, I should be sorry not to have suffered: they are the pledges of their reward; I know you too well to believe you would exercise barbarity for its own sake.

If your design be to put me to the proof, I will murmur no more. It is but just that you should know whether I am constant, endued with patience, docility ; and, in short, worthy of the bliss you design me. Gods! if this be your idea, I shall complain that I have not suffered half enough. Ah, Eloisa, for heaven's sake support the flattering expectation in my heart, and invent, if you can, some torment better proportioned to the reward.

---

## LETTER XX.

FROM ELOISA.

**I** Received both your letters at once, and I perceive, by your anxiety in the second concerning the fate of the other, that when imagination takes the lead of reason, the latter is not always in haste to follow, but suffers her, sometimes, to proceed alone. Did you suppose, when you reached Sion, that the post waited only for your letter, that it would be delivered to me the instant of his arrival here, and that my answer would be favoured with equal despatch? No, no; my good friend, things do not always go on so swimmingly. Your two epistles came both together; because the post happened not to set out till after he had received the second. It requires some time to distribute the letters; my agent has not always an immediate opportunity of meeting me alone,  
and

and the post from hence does not return the day after his arrival: so that all things calculated, it must be at least a week before we can receive an answer one from the other. This I have explained to you with a design, once for all, to satisfy your impatience. Whilst you are exclaiming against fortune and my negligence, you see that I have been busied in obtaining the information necessary to insure our correspondence, and prevent your anxiety. Which of us have been best employed, I leave to your own decision.

Let us, my dear friend, talk no more of pain; rather partake the joy I feel at the return of my kind father, after a tedious absence of eight months. He arrived on Thursday evening, since which happy moment I have thought of nobody else\*. O thou, whom, next to the Author of my being, I love more than all the world! why must thy letters, thy complainings affect my soul, and interrupt the first transports of a re-united, happy family?

You expect to monopolise my whole attention. But, tell me, could you love a girl whose passion for her lover could extinguish all affection for her parents? Would you, because you are uneasy, have me insensible to the endearments of a kind father? No, my worthy friend, you must not embitter my innocent joy by your unjust reproaches. You, who have so much sen-

E 5

sibility,

\* The Lady seems to have forgot what she said in the preceding paragraph.



sibility, can surely conceive the sacred pleasures of being pressed to the throbbing heart of a tender parent. Do you think that in those delightful moments it is possible to divide one's affection?

*Sol che son figlia io mi rammento adesso.*

When all I think of, is that I'm his child.

Yet, you are not to imagine I can forget you. Do we ever forget what we really love? No, the more lively impressions of a moment have no power to efface the other. I was not unaffected with your departure hence, and shall not be displeased to see you return. But—be patient, like me, because you must, without asking any other reason. Be assured that I will recall you as soon as it is in my power; and remember, that those who complain loudest of absence do not always suffer most.

## L E T T E R XXI.

TO ELOISA.

**H**OW was I tormented in receiving the letter which I so impatiently expected! I waited at the post-house. The mail was scarce opened before I gave in my name, and began to importune the man. He told me there was a letter for me—my heart leaped—I asked for it with great impatience, and at last received it. O Eloisa! how I rejoiced to behold the well-known hand! A thousand times would I have  
kissed

kissed the precious characters, but I wanted resolution to press the letter to my lips, or to open it before so many witnesses. Immediately I retired; my knees trembled; I scarce knew my way; I broke the seal the moment I had passed the first turning; I ran over, or rather devoured, the dear lines, till I came to that part which so movingly speaks your tenderness and affection for your venerable father—I wept; I was observed; I then retired to a place of greater privacy, and there mingled my joyful tears with your's. With transport I embraced your happy father, though I hardly remember him. The voice of nature reminded me of my own, and I shed fresh tears to his memory.

O incomparable Eloisa! what can you possibly learn of me? It is from you only can be learnt every thing that is great and good, and especially that divine union of nature, love, and virtue, which never existed but in you. Every virtuous affection is distinguished in your heart by a sensibility so peculiar to yourself, that for the better regulation of my own, as my actions are already submitted to your will, I perceive my sentiments also must be determined by your's.

Yet, what a difference there is between your situation and mine! I do not mean as to rank or fortune; sincere affection, and dignity of soul; want none of these. But you are surrounded by a number of kind friends who adore you—a tender mother, and a father who loves you as his only hope—a friend and cousin who seems to

breathe only for your sake: you are the ornament and oracle of an entire family, the boast and admiration of a whole town—these, all these, divide your sensibility, and what remains for love is but a small part in comparison of that which is ravished from you by duty, nature, and friendship. But I, alas! a wanderer without a family, and almost without country, have no one but you upon earth, and am possessed of nothing but my love. Be not, therefore, surprised, though your heart may have more sensibility, that mine should know better how to love; and that you, who excel me in every thing else, must yield to me in this respect.

You need not, however, be apprehensive lest I should indiscreetly trouble you with my complaints. No, I will not interrupt your joy, because it adds to your felicity, and is in its nature laudable. Imagination shall represent the pathetic scene; and since I have no happiness of my own, I will endeavour to enjoy your's.

Whatever may be your reasons for prolonging my absence, I believe them just; but, though I knew them to be otherwise, what would that avail? Have I not promised implicit obedience? Can I suffer more in being silent, than in parting from you? But remember, Eloisa, your soul now directs two separate bodies, and that the one she animates by choice will continue the most faithful.

————— *Nodo piu forte:*

*Fabricato da noi, non dalla sorte.*

————— Joined by the strongest bonds,

Which we ourselves, and not blind fortune, tied.

No,

No, Eloisa, you shall hear no repining. Till you are pleased to recall me from exile, I will try to deceive the tedious hours in exploring the mountains of Valais, whilst they are yet practicable. I am of opinion that this unfrequented country deserves the attention of speculative curiosity, and that it wants nothing to excite admiration but a skilful spectator. Perhaps, my excursion may give rise to a few observations that may not be entirely undeserving your perusal. To amuse a fine lady one should describe a witty and polite nation; but I know my Eloisa will have more pleasure in a picture where simplicity of manners and rural happiness are the principal objects.

---

## L E T T E R XXII.

FROM ELOISA.

**A**T length the ice is broken—you have been mentioned. Notwithstanding your poor opinion of my learning, it was sufficient to surprise my father; nor was he less pleased with my progress in musick and drawing\*. Indeed, to the great astonishment of my mother, who was prejudiced by your imposition† on her, he was satisfied

\* A mighty accomplished scholar at twenty years of age to have acquired such a variety of improvement. At thirty, indeed, she felicitates herself that she is no longer so very knowing.

† Alluding to a letter written by him to her mother in a very equivocal stile, which is suppressed.

satisfied with my improvement in every thing except heraldry, which he thinks I have neglected. But all this could not be acquired without a master : I told him mine, enumerating at the same time all the sciences he proposed to teach me, except one. He remembers to have seen you several times on his last journey, and does not appear to retain any impression to your disadvantage.

He then enquired about your fortune?—He was told it was not great.—Your birth?—he was answered, *honest*. This word *honest* sounds very equivocal in the ears of nobility : it excited some suspicions, which were confirmed in the explanation. As soon as he was informed that your birth was not noble, he asked what you had been paid per month. My mother replied, that you had not only refused to accept a stipend, but that you had even rejected every present she had offered. This pride of your's served but to enflame his own—who, indeed, could bear the thought of being obliged to a poor *plebeian*? Therefore, it was determined that a stipend should be offered, and that, in case you refused it, notwithstanding your merit, you should be dismissed.—Such, my friend, is the result of a conversation held concerning my most honoured master, during which his very humble scholar was not entirely at ease. I thought I could not be in too great haste to give you this information, that you might have sufficient time to consider it maturely. When you are come to a resolution, do not fail to let me know it; for it  
is

is a matter entirely within your own province, and beyond my jurisdiction.

I am not much pleased with your intended excursion to the mountains: not that I think it will prove an unentertaining dissipation, or that your narrative will not give me pleasure; but I am fearful lest you may not be able to support the fatigue. Besides, the season is already too far advanced. The hills will soon be covered with snow, and you may possibly suffer as much from cold as fatigue. If you should fall sick in that distant country, I should be inconsolable. Come therefore, my dear friend, come nearer to your Eloisa: it is not yet time to return to Vevai; but I would have you less rudely situated, and so as to facilitate our correspondence. I leave the choice of place to yourself: only take care that it be kept secret from the people here, and be discreet without being mysterious. I know you will be prudent for your own sake, but doubly so for mine.

Adieu! I am forced to break off.—You know I am obliged to be very cautious. But this is not all: my father has brought with him a venerable stranger, his old friend, who once saved his life in battle. Judge, then, of the reception he deserves! To-morrow he leaves us, and we are impatient to procure him every sort of entertainment that will best express our gratitude to such a benefactor. I am called, and must finish. Once more, adieu!

## L E T T E R XXIII.

TO ELOISA.

I Have employed scarce eight days in surveying a country that would require some years. But, besides that I was driven off by the snow, I chose to be before the post who brings me, I hope, a letter from Eloisa. In the mean time I begin this, and shall afterwards, if it be necessary, write another in answer to that which I shall receive.

I do not intend to give you an account of my journey in this letter; you shall see my remarks when we meet; they would take up too much of our precious correspondence. For the present, it will be sufficient to acquaint you with the situation of my heart. It is but just to render you an account of that which is entirely your's.

I set out dejected with my own sufferings, but consoled with your joy; which held me suspended in a state of langour that is not disagreeable to true sensibility. Under the conduct of a very honest guide, I crawled up the towering hills, through many a rugged, unfrequented path. Often would I muse, and then, at once, some unexpected object caught my attention. One moment I beheld stupendous rocks hanging ruinous over my head; the next I was enveloped in a drizzling cloud, which arose from a vast cascade that dashing thundered against the rocks below my feet; on one side, a perpetual torrent opened to my view a yawning abyss, which

which my eyes could hardly fathom with safety; sometimes I was lost in the obscurity of a hanging wood, and then was agreeably astonished with the sudden opening of a flowery plain. A surprising mixture of wild and cultivated nature points out the hand of man, where one would imagine man had never penetrated. Here you behold a horrid cavern, and there a human habitation; vineyards where one would expect nothing but brambles; delicious fruit among barren rocks, and corn-fields in the midst of cliffs and precipices.

But it is not labour only that renders this strange country so wonderfully contrasted; for here nature seems to have a singular pleasure in acting contradictory to herself, so different does she appear in the same place in different aspects. Towards the east the flowers of spring—to the south the fruits of autumn—and northwards the ice of winter. She unites all the seasons in the same instant, every climate in the same place, different soils on the same land, and, with a harmony elsewhere unknown, joins the produce of the plains to those of the highest Alps. Add to these, the illusions of vision, the tops of the mountains variously illumined, the harmonious mixture of light and shade, and their different effects in the morning and the evening as I travelled; you may then form some idea of the scenes which engaged my attention, and which seemed to change as I passed, as on an enchanted theatre; for the prospect of mountains being almost perpendicular to the horizon, strikes the eye at the same



same instant, and more powerfully than that of a plain, where the objects are seen obliquely and half concealed behind each other.

To this pleasing variety of scenes I attributed the serenity of my mind during my first day's journey. I wondered to find that inanimate beings should over-rule our most violent passions, and despised the impotence of philosophy for having less power over the soul than a succession of lifeless objects. But, finding that my tranquillity continued during the night, and even increased with the following day, I began to believe it flowed from some other source, which I had not yet discovered. That day I reached the lower mountains, and, passing over their rugged tops, at last ascended the highest summit I could possibly attain. Having walked a while in the clouds I came to a place of greater serenity, whence one may peacefully observe the thunder and the storm gathering below—Ah! too flattering picture of human wisdom, of which the original never existed, except in those sublime regions whence the emblem is taken.

Here it was that I plainly discovered, in the purity of the air, the true cause of that returning tranquillity of soul, to which I had been so long a stranger. This impression is general, though not universally observed. Upon the tops of mountains, the air being subtle and pure, we respire with greater freedom, our bodies are more active, our minds more serene, our pleasures less ardent, and our passions much more moderate.

Our

Our meditations acquire a degree of sublimity from the grandeur of the objects around us. It seems as if, being lifted above all human society, we had left every low, terrestrial sentiment behind; and that as we approach the æthereal regions the soul imbibes something of their eternal purity. One is grave without being melancholy, peaceful but not indolent, pensive yet contented: our desires lose their painful violence, and leave only a gentle emotion in our hearts. Thus the passions which in the lower world are man's greatest torment, in happier climates contribute to his felicity. I doubt much whether any violent agitation, or vapours of the mind, could hold out against such a situation; and I am surprised that a bath of the reviving and wholesome air of the mountains is not frequently prescribed both by physick and morality.

*Qui non palazzi, non teatro o loggia,  
Ma'n lor vece un' abete, un faggio, un pino  
Trà l'erba verde e'l bel monte vicino  
Lewan di terra al Ciel nostr' intelletto.*

Nor palace, theatre, nor proud exchange,  
Here lift their heads; but fir-trees, beech, and pine,  
O'er verdant valleys, and on pleasant hills,  
Lift up the thoughtful mind from earth to heavens

Imagine to yourself all these united impressions; the amazing variety, magnitude, and beauty of a thousand stupendous objects; the pleasure of gazing at an entire new scene, strange birds, unknown plants, another nature, and a new world. To these even the subtilty of the  
air

air is advantageous; it enlivens the natural colours of objects, renders them more distinct, and brings them as it were nearer to the eye. In short, there is a kind of supernatural beauty in these mountainous prospects which charms the senses of the mind both into a forgetfulness of one's self and of every thing in the world.

I could have spent the whole time in contemplating these magnificent landscapes, if I had not found still greater pleasure in the conversation of the inhabitants. In my observations you will find a slight sketch of their manners, their simplicity, their equality of soul, and of that peacefulness of mind which renders them happy by an exemption from pain, rather than by the enjoyment of pleasure. But what I was unable to describe, and which is almost impossible to be conceived, is their disinterested humanity and hospitable zeal to oblige every stranger whom chance or curiosity brings to visit them. This I myself continually experienced—I who was entirely unknown, and who was conducted from place to place only by a common guide. When, in the evening, I arrived in any hamlet at the foot of a mountain, each of the inhabitants was so eager to have me lodge at his house that I was always embarrassed which to accept; and he who obtained the preference seemed so well pleased that, at first, I supposed his joy to arise from a lucrative prospect; but I was amazed, after having used the house like an inn, to find my host not only refuse to accept the least gratuity

tuity, but offended that it was offered. I found it universally the same. So that it was true hospitality, which, from its unusual ardour, I had mistaken for avarice. So perfectly disinterested are these people, that during eight days it was not in my power to leave one dollar among them. In short, how is it possible to spend money in a country where the landlord will not be paid for his provisions, nor the servant for his trouble, and where there are no beggars to be found? Nevertheless, money is by no means abundant in the Upper Valais, and for that very reason the inhabitants are not in want; for the necessaries of life are plentiful, yet nothing is sent out of the country; they are not luxurious at home, nor is the peasant less laborious. If ever they have more money they will grow poor, and of this they are so sensible, that they tread upon mines of gold, which they are determined never to open.

I was at first greatly surprised at the difference between the customs and manners of these people and those of the Lower Valais; for in the road through that part of the country to Italy travellers pay dearly enough for their passage. An inhabitant of the place explained the mystery. "The strangers (says he) who pass through the Lower Valais are chiefly merchants, or people who travel in pursuit of gain; it is but just that they should leave us a part of their profit, and that we should treat them as they treat others; but here travellers meet with a different reception, because we are assured their journey  
must

must have a disinterested motive: they visit us out of friendship, and therefore we receive them as our friends. But, indeed, our hospitality is not very expensive; we have but few visitors.”—  
“No wonder (I replied) that mankind should avoid a people, who live only to enjoy life, and not to acquire wealth, and excite envy. Happy, deservedly happy, mortals! I am pleased to think that one must certainly resemble you in some degree, in order to approve your manners and taste your simplicity.”

What I found particularly agreeable whilst I continued among them was the natural ease and freedom of their behaviour. They went about their business in the house as if I had not been there; and it was in my power to act as if I were the sole inhabitant. They are entirely unacquainted with the impertinent vanity of *doing the honours of the house*, as if to remind the stranger of his dependence. When I said nothing, they concluded I was satisfied to live in their manner; but the least hint was sufficient to make them comply with mine, without any repugnance or astonishment. The only compliment which they made me, when they heard that I was a Swiss, was, that they looked upon me as a brother, and I ought therefore to think myself at home. After this, they took but little notice of me, not supposing that I could doubt the sincerity of their offers, or refuse to accept them whenever they could be useful. The same simplicity subsists among themselves: when the  
children

children are once arrived at maturity, all distinction between them and their parents seems to have ceased; their domesticks are seated at the same table with their master; the same liberty reigns in the cottage as in the republick, and each family is an epitome of the state.

They never deprived me of my liberty, except when at table: indeed, it was always in my power to avoid the repast; but being once seated I was obliged to sit late, and drink much. "What! (said they) a Swiss and not drink!" For my own part, I confess I am no enemy to good wine, and have no dislike to a chearful glass; but I dislike compulsion. I have observed that deceitful men are generally sober, and that peculiar reserve at table frequently indicates a duplicity of soul. A guileless heart is not afraid of the unguarded eloquence, and affectionate folly which commonly precede drunkenness; but we ought always to avoid excess. Yet even that was sometimes impossible among these hearty Valaisians, their wine being strong, and water absolutely excluded. Who could act the philosopher here, or be offended with such honest people? In short, I drank to show my gratitude, and since they refused to take my money; I made them a compliment of my reason.

They have another custom, not less embarrassing, which is practised even in the houses of the magistrates themselves: I mean that of their wives and daughters standing behind one's chair, and waiting at table like so many servants.

This

This would be insupportable to the gallantry of a Frenchman, especially as the women of this country are in general so extremely handsome, that one can hardly bear to be thus attended by the maid. You may certainly believe them beautiful, since they appeared so to me; for my eyes have been accustomed to Eloisa, and are therefore extremely difficult to please.

As for me, who pay more regard to the manners of the people with whom I reside, than to any rules of politeness, I received their services in silence, and with a degree of gravity equal to that of Don Quixote when he was with the Dukes. I could not, however, help smiling now and then at the contrast between the rough old grey beards at the table, and the charming complexion of the fair nymphs in waiting, in whom a single word would excite a blush, which rendered their beauty more glowing and conspicuous. Not that I could admire the enormous compass of their necks, which resemble in their dazzling whiteness only that perfect model, which always formed in my imagination (for though veiled, I have sometimes stolen a glance) that celebrated marble which is supposed to excel in delicate proportion the most perfect work of nature.

Be not surprised to find me so knowing in mysteries which you so carefully conceal: this hath happened in spite of all your caution; for one sense instructs another, and, notwithstanding the most jealous vigilance, there will always remain

remain some friendly interstice or other, through which the sight performs the office of the touch. The curious eye busily insinuates itself with impunity under the flowers of a nosegay, wanders beneath the spreading gauze, and conveys that elastick resistance to the hand which it dares not experience.

*Parte appar delle mamme acerbe e crude,  
Parte altrui ne ricopre invida vesta;  
Invida, mas' agli occhi il varco chiude,  
L' amoroso pensier già non arresta.*

In vain lies half-conceal'd the tender breast,  
Or gently heaves beneath th' invidious vest;  
Through th' envious covering darts the lover's sight,  
And riots on the scene of fond delight.

I am also not quite satisfied with the dress of the Valaisian ladies: their gowns are raised so very high behind, that they all appear round-shouldered; yet this, together with their little black coifs, and other peculiarities of their dress, has a singular effect, and wants neither simplicity nor elegance. I shall bring you one of their complete suits, which I dare say will fit you; it was made to the finest shape in the whole country.

But, whilst I travelled with delight these regions, which are so little known, and so deserving of admiration, where was my Eloisa? Was she banished my memory?—Forget my Eloisa! Forget my own soul! Is it possible for me to be one moment of my life alone, who exist only through her? O, no! our souls are inseparable,



and, by instinct, change their situation together, according to the prevailing state of mind. When I am in sorrow it takes refuge with your's, and seeks consolation in the place where you are; as was the case the day I left you. When I am happy, being incapable of enjoyment alone, they both attend upon me, and our pleasure becomes mutual: thus it was during my whole excursion. I did not take one step without you, nor admire a single prospect without eagerly pointing its beauties to Eloisa. The same tree spread its shadow over us both, and we constantly reclined against the same flowery bank. Sometimes, as we sat, I gazed with you at the wonderful scene before us, and sometimes on my knees turned with rapture to an object more worthy the contemplation of human sensibility. If I came to a difficult pass, I saw you skip over it with the activity of the bounding doe. When a torrent happened to cross our path, I presumed to press you in my arms, walked slowly through the water, and was always sorry when I reached the opposite bank. Every thing in that peaceful solitude brought you to my imagination; the pleasing awefulness of nature, the invariable serenity of the air, the grateful simplicity of the people, their constant and natural prudence, the unaffected modesty and innocence of the sex; in short, every object that gave pleasure to the eye or to the heart seemed inseparably connected with the idea of Eloisa.

Divine

Divine maid! have I often tenderly exclaimed, O that we might spend our days in these unfrequented mountains, unenvyed and unknown! Why can I not here collect my whole soul into thee alone, and become, in turn, the universe to Eloisa! Thy charms would then receive the homage they deserve; then would our hearts taste without interruption the delicious fruit of the soft passion with which they are filled: the years of our long Elysium would pass away untold, and when the frigid hand of age should have calmed our first transports, the constant habit of thinking and acting from the same principle would beget a lasting friendship no less tender than our love, whose vacant place should be filled by the kindred sentiments which grew and were nourished with it in our youth. Like this happy people, we would practice every duty of humanity, we would unite in acts of benevolence, and at last die with the satisfaction of not having lived in vain.

Hark!——it is the post. I will close my letter, and fly to receive another from Eloisa. How my heart beats? Why was I roused from my reverie? I was happy at least in idea. Heaven only knows what I am to be in reality.

## L E T T E R XXIV.

T O E L O I S A.

**I** Sit down to give you an immediate answer to that article of your letter concerning the stipend. Thank God, it requires no reflexion. My sentiments, my Eloisa, on this subject are these:

In what is called honour there is a material distinction between that which is founded on the opinion of the world, and that which is derived from self esteem. The first is nothing but the loud voice of foolish prejudice, which has no more stability than the wind; but the basis of the latter is fixed in the eternal truths of morality. The honour of the world may be of advantage with regard to fortune; but, as it cannot reach the soul, it has no influence on real happiness. True honour, on the contrary, is the very essence of felicity; for it is that alone inspires the permanent interior satisfaction which constitutes the happiness of a rational being. Let us, my Eloisa, apply those principles to your question, and it will be soon resolved.

To become an instructor of philosophy, and like the fool in the fable receive money for teaching wisdom, will appear rather low in the eyes of the world, and, I own, has something in it ridiculous enough. Yet, as no man can subsist merely of himself, and as there can be nothing wrong in eating the fruit of one's labour,

bour, we will regard this opinion of mankind as a piece of foolish prejudice, to which it would be madness to sacrifice our happiness. I know you will not esteem me the less on this account; nor shall I deserve more pity for living upon the talents I have cultivated.

But, my Eloisa, there are other things to be considered. Let us leave the multitude, and look a little into ourselves. What shall I in reality be to your father, in receiving from him a salary for instructing his daughter? Am I not from that moment a mercenary, a hireling, a servant? And do not I tacitly pledge my faith for his security, like the meanest of his domesticks? Now, what has a father to lose of greater value than his only daughter, even though she were not an Eloisa? and what should the man do who had thus pledged his faith, and sold his service?—Ought he to stifle the flame within his breast? Ah! Eloisa, that you know to be impossible: or should he rather indulge his passion, and wound, in the most sensible part, the man who has an undoubted right to his fidelity? In this case I behold a perfidious teacher, trampling under foot one of the most sacred bonds of society\*, a seducer, a domestick traitor, whom

F 3

the

\* Unhappy youth! not to perceive, that to suffer himself to be paid in gratitude what he refused in money was infinitely more criminal. Under the mask of instruction he corrupted her heart; instead of nourishment he gives her poison, and is thanked by a deluded mother for the ruin of her child. Nevertheless, one may perceive

in

the law hath justly condemned to die. I hope Eloisa understands me—I do not fear death, but the ignominy of deserving it, and my own contempt.

When the letters of your name's-sake and Abelard fell into your hands, you remember my opinion of the conduct of that priest. I always pitied Eloisa: she had a heart made for love: but Abelard seemed to deserve his fate, as he was a stranger both to love and virtue. Ought I then to follow his example? What wretch dares preach that virtue which he will not practise! Whosoever suffers himself to be thus blinded by his passions will soon find himself punished in a loathing for those very sensations to which he sacrificed his honour. There can be no pleasure in any enjoyment which the heart cannot approve, and which tends to sink in our estimation the object of our love. Abstract the idea of perfection, and our enthusiasm vanishes: take away our esteem, and love is at an end. How is it possible for a woman to honour a man who dishonours himself? and how can he adore the person who was weak enough to abandon herself to a vile seducer! Mutual contempt, therefore, is the consequence; their very passions will grow burthensome, and they will

in him a sincere love for virtue; but it is too soon dissipated by his passions; that with all his fine preaching, unless his youth be admitted as an excuse, he is no better than a wicked fellow. The two lovers, however, deserve some compassion; the mother is chiefly in fault.

will have lost their honour without finding happiness.

But how different, my Eloisa, is it with two lovers of the same age, influenced by the same passion, united by the same bonds, under no particular engagements, and both in possession of their original liberty. The most severe laws can inflict no other punishment than the natural consequences of their passion: their sole obligation is to love eternally; and if there be in the world some unhappy climate, where men's authority dares to break such sacred bonds, they are surely punished by the crimes that must inevitably ensue.

These, my ever prudent and virtuous Eloisa, are my reasons: they are indeed but a frigid commentary on those which you urged with so much spirit and energy in one of your letters; but they are sufficient to show you how entirely I am of your opinion. You remember that I did not persist in refusing your offer, and that, notwithstanding the first scruples of prejudice, being convinced that it was not inconsistent with my honour, I consented to open the box. But, in the present case, my duty, my reason, my love, all speak too plainly to be misunderstood. If I must choose between my honour and Eloisa, my heart is prepared to resign her—I love her too well to purchase her at the price of my honour!

## L E T T E R XXV.

FROM ELOISA.

**Y**OU will easily believe, my dear friend, how extremely I was entertained with the agreeable account of your late tour. The elegance of the detail itself would have engaged my esteem, even though its authour had been wholly a stranger; but its coming from you was a circumstance of additional recommendation. I could, however, find in my heart to chide you for a certain part of it, which you will easily guess, though I could scarce refrain from laughing at the ridiculous finesse you made use of to shelter yourself under Tasso. Have you never really perceived the wide difference that should be made between a narration intended for the view of the public, and that little sketch of particulars which is solely to be referred to the inspection of your mistress. Or is love, with all its fears, doubts, jealousies, and scruples, to have no more regard paid to it than the mere decencies of good-breeding are intitled to? Could you be at a moment's loss to conceive that the dry preciseness of an authour must be displeasing, where the passionate sentiments of inspiring tenderness were expected? And could you deliberately resolve to disappoint my expectations? But I fear I have already said too much on a subject which perhaps had better been entirely passed over. Besides, the contents of your last letter have so closely engaged my thoughts

thoughts, that I have had no leisure to attend to the particulars of the former. Leaving then, my dear friend, the Valais to some future opportunity, let us now fix our attention on what more immediately concerns ourselves—we shall find sufficient matter for employment.

I very clearly foresaw what your sentiments would be, and indeed the time we have known each other had been spent to little purpose if our conjectures were still vague and uncertain. If virtue ever should forsake us, be assured it will not, cannot, be in those instances, which require resolution and resignation\*. When the assault is violent, the first step to be taken is resistance; and we shall ever triumph, I hope, so long as we are forewarned of our danger. A state of careless security is the most to be dreaded, and we may be taken by surprise ere we perceive that the citadel is attacked. The most fatal circumstance of all, is the continuance of misfortunes; their very duration makes them dangerous to a mind that might bear up against the sharpest trials and most vigorous sudden onsets; it may be worn out by the tedious pressure of inferior sufferings, and give way to the length of those afflictions which have quite exhausted its forbearance. This struggle, my dear friend, falls to our lot. We are not called upon to signalise ourselves by deeds of heroism, or renowned

F 5

exploits;

\* The sequel will but too well inform the reader, that this assertion of Eloisa's was extremely ill grounded.



exploits; but we are bound to the more painful task of supporting an indefatigable resistance, and enduring misfortunes without the least relaxation.

I foresaw but too well the melancholy event. Our happiness is passed away like a morning cloud, and our trials are beginning without the least prospect of any alteration for the better. Every circumstance is to me an aggravation of my distress, and what at other times would have passed unheeded and unobserved, now serves but too plainly to increase my dismay: my body sympathises with my mind in this distressed situation; the one is as spiritless and languid as the other is alarmed and apprehensive. Involuntary tears are ever stealing down my cheeks, without my being sensible of any immediate cause of sorrow. I do not indeed foresee any very distressful events, but I perceive, alas, too well, my fondest hopes blasted, my most sanguine expectations disappointed, and what good purpose can it serve to water the leaves, when the plant is decayed and withered at the root.

I feel myself unable to support your absence. I feel, my dear friend, that I can never live without you, and this is a fresh subject to me of continual apprehensions. How often do I traverse the scenes which were once the witnesses of our happy interviews; but, *alas!* you are no where to be found. I constantly expect you at your usual time; but the time comes and goes without your return. Every object of my senses presents a new monument, and every object,

ject, alas! reminds me that I have lost you. Whatever your sufferings may be in other respects, you are exempted, however, from this aggravation. Your heart alone is sufficient to remind you of my unhappy absence. Did you but know what endless pangs these fruitless expectations, these impatient longings perpetually occasion, how they embitter and increase the torments I already feel, you would without hesitation prefer your condition to mine.

If, indeed, I might give vent to my sad tale, and trust the tender recital of my numberless woes to the kind bosom of a faithful friend, I might be relieved in some degree of my misfortunes. But even this relief is denied me, except when I find opportunity to pour a few tender sighs into the compassionate bosom of my cousin: but in general I am constrained to speak a language quite foreign to my heart, and to assume an air of thoughtless gaiety, when I am ready to sink into the grave.

*Sentirsi, O Dei, morir,  
E non poter mai dir,  
Morir mi Sento!*

Ye Gods! how dreadful is the pain,  
To suffer and must not complain.

A further circumstance of my distress, if any thing more distressful can yet be added, is, that my disorder is continually increasing. I have of late thought so gloomily, that I seldom now think otherwise; and the more anxiety I feel at

the remembrance of our past pleasures, the more eagerly do I indulge myself in the painful recollection. Tell me, my dear, dear friend, if you can tell me by experience, how nearly allied is love to this tender sorrow, and if disquiet and uneasiness itself be not the cement of the warmest affections?

I have a thousand other things to say, but first I would fain know, exactly, where you are. Besides, this train of thinking has awakened my passion, and indeed rendered me unfit for writing any more. Adieu, my dear friend, and though I am obliged to lay down my pen, be assured I can never think of parting with you.

## B I L L E T.

**A**S this comes to your hands by a waterman, an entire stranger to me, I shall only say at present that I have taken up my quarters at *Meillerie*, on the opposite shore. I shall now have an opportunity of seeing, at least, the dear place which I dare not approach.

## L E T T E R XXVI.

TO ELOISA.

**W**HAT a wonderful alteration has a short space of time produced in my affairs! The thoughts of meeting, delightful as they were, are now too much allayed with  
dis-

disquieting apprehensions. What should have been the object of my hopes is now, alas! become the subject of my fears; and the very spirit of discernment, which on most occasions is so useful, now serves but to dismay, to disquiet, and torment me. Ah, Eloisa! too much sensibility, too much tenderness, proves the bitterest curse instead of the choicest blessing: vexation and disappointment are its certain consequences. The temperature of the air, the change of the seasons, the brilliancy of the sun; and thickness of the fogs, are so many moving springs to the unhappy possessor, and he becomes the wanton sport of their arbitration: his thoughts, his satisfaction, his happiness, depend on the blowing of the winds, and the different points of east and west can sadden or enliven his expectations: swayed as he is by prejudices, and distracted by passions, the sentiments of his heart find continual opposition from the axioms of his head. Should he perchance square his conduct to the undeviable rule of right, and set up truth for his standard, instead of profit and convenience, he is sure to fall a martyr to the maxims of his integrity; the world will join in the cry, and hunt him down as a common enemy. But supposing this not the case, honesty and uprightness, though exempted from persecution, are neither of them the channels of honour, nor the road to riches: poverty and want are their inseparable attendants, and man, by adhering to the one, necessarily attaches himself to the inheritance

inheritance of the other; and by this means he becomes his own tormenter. He will search for supreme happiness, without taking into the account the infirmities of his nature. Thus his affections and his reason will be engaged in a perpetual warfare, and unbounded ideas and desires must pave the way for endless disappointments.

This situation, however dismal, is nevertheless the true one, in which the hard fate of my worldly affairs, counteracted by the ingenuous and liberal turn of my thoughts, have involved me, and which is aggravated and increased by your father's contempt and your own milder sentiments, which are at once both the delight and disquiet of my life. Had it not been for thee, thou fatal beauty, I could never have experienced the insupportable contrast between the greatness of my soul, and the low estate of my fortune. I should have lived quietly, and died contented, in a situation that would have been even below notice. But to see you without being able to possess you—to adore you, without raising myself from my obscurity—to live in the same place, and yet be separated from each other, is a struggle, my dearest Eloisa, to which I am utterly unequal. I can neither renounce you, nor surmount the cruelty of my destiny—I can neither subdue my desires, nor better my fortune.

But, as if this situation itself were not sufficiently tormenting, the horrors of it are increased by

by the gloomy succession of ideas ever present to my imagination. Perhaps, too, this is heightened by the nature of the place I live in—it is dark—it is dreadful: but then it suits the habit of my soul; and a more pleasant prospect of nature would reflect little comfort on the dreary view within me. A ridge of barren rocks surround the coast, and my dwelling is still made more dismal by the uncomfortable prospects of winter. And yet, Eloisa, I am sensible enough that if I were once forced to abandon you, I should stand in need of no other abode, no other season.

While my mind is distracted with such continual agitations, my body too is moving as it were in sympathy with those emotions. I run to and fro, climb the rocks, explore my whole district, and find every thing as horrible without, as I experience it within. There is no longer any verdure to be seen, the grass is yellow and withered, the trees are stripped of their foliage, and the north-east blast heaps snow and ice around me. In short, the whole face of nature appears as decayed to my outward senses, as I myself from within am dead to hope and joy.

Amidst this rocky coast I have found out a solitary cleft, from whence I have a distinct view of the dear place you inhabit. You may easily imagine how I have feasted on this discovery, and refreshed my sight with so delightful a prospect. I spent a whole day in endeavouring to discern the very house, but the distance, alas,

is too great for my efforts; and imagination was forced to supply what my wearied sight was unable to discover. I immediately ran to the curate's, and borrowed his telescope, which presented to my view, or at least to my thoughts, the exact spot I desired. My whole time has been taken up ever since in contemplating those walls that enclose the only source of my comfort, the only object of my wishes: notwithstanding the inclement severity of the season, I continue thus employed from day-break until evening. A fire, made of leaves and a few dry sticks, defends me in some measure from the intenseness of the cold. This place, wild and uncultivated as it is, is so suited to my taste, that I am now writing to you in it, on a summit which the ice has separated from the rock.

Here, my dearest Eloisa, your unhappy lover is enjoying the last pleasure that perhaps he may ever relish on this side the grave. Here, in spite of every obstacle, he can penetrate into your very chamber. He is even dazzled with your beauty, and the tenderness of your looks re-animates his drooping soul; nay, he can wish for those raptures which he experienced with you in the grove. Alas! it is all a dream, the idle phantom of a projecting mind. Pleasing as it is, it vanishes like a vision, and I am soon forced to awake from so agreeable a delirium; and yet even then I have full employment for my thoughts. I admire and revere the purity of your sentiments, the innocence of your life: I  
trace

trace out in my mind the method of your daily conduct, by comparing it with what I formerly well knew in happier days, and under more endearing circumstances: I find you ever attentive to engagements which heighten your character: need I add that such a view most movingly affects me. In the morning I say to myself, she is just now awaking from calm and gentle slumbers, as fresh as the early dew, and as composed as the most spotless innocence, and is dedicating to her Creator a day which she determines shall not be lost to virtue. She is now going to her mother, her tender heart all susceptible of the soft ties of filial duty: she is either relieving her parents from the burthen of domestick cares, soothing their aged sorrows, pitying their infirmities, or excusing those indiscretions in others which she knows not how to allow in herself. At another time, she is employing herself in works of genius or of use, storing her mind with valuable knowledge, or reconciling the elegancies of life to its more sober occupations. Sometimes I see a neat and studied simplicity set off those charms which need no such recommendations; and at others she is consulting her holy pastor on the circumstances of indigent merit. Here she is aiding, comforting, relieving the orphan or the widow; there she is the entertainment of the whole circle of her friends, by her prudent and sensible conversation. Now she is tempering the gaiety of youth with wisdom and discretion: and some  
few



few moments (forgive me the presumption) you bestow on my hapless love. I see you melted into tears at the perusal of my letters, and can perceive your devoted lover is the subject of the lines you are penning, and of the passionate discourse between you and your cousin.—Oh, Eloisa, shall we never be united?—Shall we never spend our days together?—Can we, Eloisa! can we part for ever? No, far be that thought from my soul. I start into frenzy at the very idea, and my distempered mind hurries me from rock to rock. Involuntary sighs and groans betray my inward disorder: I roar out like a lioness robbed of her young. I can do every thing but lose you; there is nothing—no, nothing, I would not attempt for you, at the risk of my life.

I had written thus far, and was waiting an opportunity to convey it, when your last came to my hands from Sion. The melancholy air it breathes has lulled my griefs to rest. Now, now, am I convinced of what you observed long ago, concerning that wonderful sympathy between lovers. Your sorrow is of the calmer, mine of the more passionate kind; yet, though the affection of the mind be the same, it takes its colour in each from the different channels through which it runs; and, indeed, it is but natural, that the greatest misfortunes should produce the most disquieting anxieties; but why do I talk of misfortunes? They would be absolutely insupportable. No, be assured, my Eloisa,  
that

that the irresistible decree of heaven has designed us for each other. This is the first great law we are to obey, and it is the great business of life to calm, soothe, and sweeten it while we are here. I see, and lament it too, that your designs are too vague and inconclusive for execution. You seem willing to conquer insurmountable difficulties, while at the same time you are neglecting the only feasible methods. An enthusiastick idea of honour has supplanted your reason, and your virtue is become little better than an empty delirium.

If, indeed, it were possible for you to remain always as young and beautiful as you are at present, my only wish, my only prayer to heaven would be, to know of your continual happiness, to see you once every year, only once, and then spend the rest of my time in viewing your mansion from afar, and in adoring you among the rocks. But, behold, alas, the inconceivable swiftness of that fate, which is never at rest. It is constantly pursuing, time flies hastily, the opportunity is irretrievable, and your beauty—even your beauty, is circumscribed by very narrow limits of existence: it must some time or other decay and wither away, like a flower that fades before it is gathered. In the mean time, I am consuming my health, youth, strength, in continual sorrow, and waste away my years in complaining. Think! oh think, Eloisa! that we have already lost some time; think too that it will never return, and that the case will be the same

same with the years that are to come, if we suffer them to pass by neglected and unimproved. O fond, mistaken fair! you are laying plans for a futurity at which you may never arrive, and neglecting the present moments, which can never be retrieved. You are so anxious and intent on that uncertain hereafter, that you forget that in the mean while our hearts melt away like snow before the sun.—Awake, awake, my dearest Eloisa, from so fatal a delusion! Leave all your concerted schemes, the wanton sallies of a fruitful fancy, and determine to be happy. Come, my only hope, my only joy! to thy fond expecting lover's arms: come, and reunite the hitherto divided portions of our existence. Come, and, before heaven, let us solemnly swear to live and die for each other. You have no need, I am sure, of any encouragement, any exhortations, to bear up against the fear of want. Though poor, provided we are happy, what a treasure will be in our possession! But let us not so insult either the dignity or the humanity of the species, as to suppose that this vast world cannot furnish an asylum for two unfortunate lovers. But we need not despair while I have health and strength; the bread earned by the sweat of my brow will be more relishing to you than the most costly banquet which luxury could prepare. And, indeed, can any repast, provided and seasoned by love, be insipid? Oh my angel, if our happiness were sure to last us but one day, could you cruelly resolve to quit this life without tasting it.

One

One word more, and I have done.—You know, Eloisa, the use which was formerly made of the rock of Leucatia—it was the last sad refuge of disappointed lovers. The place I am now in, and my own distressed situation, bear but too close a resemblance—The rock is craggy—the water deep—and I am in despair!

---

### LETTER XXVII.

FROM CLARA.

I Have been lately so distracted with care and grief, that is with much difficulty I have been able to summon sufficient strength for writing. Your misfortunes and mine are now at their utmost crisis. In short, the lovely Eloisa is very dangerously ill, and, ere this can reach you, may perhaps be no more. The mortification she underwent in parting with you first brought on her disorder, which was considerably increased by some very interesting discourse she has since had with her father. This has been still heightened by circumstances of additional aggravation; and, as if all this were too little, your last letter came in aid, and completed what, alas! was already scarce supportable. The perusal of it affected her so sensibly, that, after a whole night of violent agitations and cruel struggles, she was seized with a high fever, which has increased to such a degree, that she is now delirious. Even in this situation she is perpetually

ally calling for you, and speaks of you with such emotions as plainly point out that you alone are the object of her more sober thoughts. Her father is kept out of the way as much as possible, which is no inconsiderable proof that my aunt suspects the truth. She has even asked me, with some anxiety, when you intended to return? So entirely does her concern for her daughter outweigh every other consideration, I dare say she would not be sorry to see you here.

Come, then, I intreat you, as soon as you possibly can. I have hired a man and boat to transmit this to you; he will wait your orders, and you may come with him. Indeed, if you ever expect to see our devoted Eloisa alive you must not lose an instant.

## L E T T E R XXVIII.

FROM ELOISA TO CLARA.

**A**LAS! my dear Clara, how is the life you have restored me embittered by your absence! What satisfaction can there be in my recovery, when I am still preyed upon by a more violent disorder? Cruel Clara! to leave me, when I stand most in need of your assistance. You are to be absent eight days, and perhaps by that time my fate will be determined, and it will be out of your power to see me more. Oh! if you did but know his horrid proposals, and the manner of his stating them! To elope—to follow

follow him—to be carried off.—What a wretch! But of whom do I complain? My heart, my own base heart, has said a thousand times more than ever he has mentioned. Good God, if he knew all! Oh, it would hasten my ruin—I should be hurried to destruction—be forced to go with him—I shudder at the very thought.

But has my father then sold me? Yes, he has considered his daughter as mere property, and hath consigned her with as little remorse as a trader would a bale of goods. He purchases his own ease and quiet at the price of all my future comfort, nay, of my life itself—for I see but too well I can never survive it. Barbarous, unnatural, unrelenting father! Does he deserve?—But why do I talk of deserving? He is the best of fathers, and the only crime I can alledge against him, is his desire of marrying me to his friend. But my mother, my dear mother, what has she done? Alas! too much—she has loved me too much; and that very love has been my ruin.

What shall I do, Clara? What will become of me? Hans is not yet come. I am at a loss how to convey this letter to you. Before you receive it, before you return—perhaps a vagabond, abandoned, ruined, and forlorn. It is over, it is over: the time is come. A day—an hour—perhaps a moment—But who can resist their fate?—Oh! wherever I live, wherever I die, whether in honour or dishonour, in plenty or  
in

in poverty, in pleasure or in despair, remember, I beseech you, your dear, dear friend. But misfortunes too frequently produce changes in our affections. If ever I forget you, mine must be altered indeed!

## L E T T E R XXIX.

FROM ELOISA TO CLARA.

**S**TAY—stay, where you are! I intreat, I conjure you—never, never think of returning—at least, not to me. I ought never to see you more: for now, alas! I can never behold you as I ought. Where wert thou, my tender friend, my only safeguard, my guardian angel? When thou wert gone, ruin instantly ensued. Was that fatal absence of your's so indispensable, so necessary, and couldst thou leave thy friend in the most critical time of danger? What an inexhaustible fund of remorse hast thou laid up for thyself by so blameable a neglect! It will be as bitter, as lasting, as my sorrows. Thy loss is indeed as irretrievable as my own, and it were as difficult to gain another friend equal to yourself, as, alas! it is impossible to recover my innocence.

Ah! what have I said? I can neither speak nor yet be silent; and to what purpose were my silence, when my very sorrows would cry out against me? And does not all nature upbraid me with my guilt? Does not every object  
 4. around

around me remind me of my shame? I will, I must, pour my whole soul into thine, or my poor heart will burst. Canst thou hear all this, my secure and careless friend, without applying some reproaches at least to thyself? Even thy faith and truth, the blind confidence of thy friendship, but above all thy pernicious indulgencies, have been the unhappy instruments of my destruction.

What evil genius could inspire you to invite him to return—him, alas! who is now the cruel authour of my disgrace?—And am I indebted to his care for a life which he hath since made insupportable by his cruelty? Inhuman as he is, let him fly from me for ever, and deny himself the savage pleasure of being an eye-witness to my sorrows.—But why do I rave thus?—He is not to be blamed—I alone am guilty—I alone am the authour of my own misfortunes, and should therefore be the only object of anger and resentment. But vice, new as it is to me, has already infected my very soul; and the first dismal effect of it is displayed in reviling the innocent.

No, no, he never was capable of being false to his vows. His virtuous soul disdains the low artifice of imposing upon credulity, or of injuring her he loves. Doubtless, he is much more experienced in the tender passions than I ever was, since he found no difficulty to overcome himself, and I, alas! fell a victim to my unruly desires. How often have I been a witness of



his struggles and his victory, and when the violence of his transports seemed to get the better of his reason, he would stop on a sudden, as if awed and checked by virtue, when he might have led on to a certain triumph. I indulged myself too much in beholding so dangerous an object. I was afflicted at his sighs, moved with his intreaties, and melted with his tears: I shared his anxieties when I thought I was only pitying them. I have seen him so affected, that he seemed ready to faint at my feet. Love alone might perhaps have been my security; but compassion, O my Clara, has fatally undone me.

Thus, my unhappy passion assumed the form of humanity, the more easily to deprive me of the assistance of virtue. That very day he had been particularly importunate, and pressed me to elope with him. This proposal, connected as it was with the misery and distress of the best of parents, shocked my very soul; nor could I think with any patience of thus embittering their comforts. The impossibility of ever fulfilling our plighted troth, the necessity there was of concealing this impossibility from him, the regret which I felt at deceiving so tender and passionate a lover, after having flattered his expectations—all these were dreadful circumstances, which lessened my resolution, increased my weakness, blinded and subdued my reason. I was then either to kill my parents, discard my lover, or ruin myself: without knowing what I did, I resolved on the latter; and forgetting every thing

thing else, thought only of my love. Thus, one unguarded minute has betrayed me to endless misery. I am fallen into the abyss of infamy, from whence there is no return; and if I am to live, it is only to be wretched.

However, while I am here, sorrow shall be my only comfort. You, my dearest friend, are my only resource: oh! do not, do not leave me! do not, I conjure thee, rob me of thy friendship. I have indeed lost all pretensions to it, but my situation makes it requisite, my distresses now demand it. If you cannot esteem, you may at least pity so wretched a creature. Come, then, my dear Clara, and open thy heart, that I may pour in my complaints. Receive the tears of your friend; shield her, if possible, from the contempt of herself; and convince her she hath not lost every thing, by her still possessing your heart.

---

### LETTER XXX.

#### ANSWER.

**O**H! my dear, dear friend, what have you done! you who were the praise of every parent, and the envy of every child. What a mortal blow has virtue itself received through your means, who were the very pattern of discretion! But what can I say to you in so dreadful a situation? Can I think of aggravating your sorrows, and wounding a heart already

oppressed with grief; or can I give you a comfort, which, alas! I myself want? Shall I reflect your image in all the dismal colours of your present distress; or shall I have recourse to artifice, and remind you not of what you are, but of what you ought to be? Do thou, most wholly and unspotted Friendship, steal thy soft veil over all my awakened senses, and mercifully remove the sight of those disasters thou wert unable to prevent.

You know I have long feared the misfortune you are bewailing. How often have I foretold it, and, alas! how often been disregarded? Do you blame me then for having trusted you too much to your own heart? Oh! doubt not but I would have betrayed you, if even that could have been made the means of your preservation; but I knew better than yourself your own tender sensations. I perceived but too plainly that death or ruin were the melancholy alternatives; and even when your apprehensions made you banish your lover, the only matter then in question, was, whether you should despair, or he be recalled. You will easily believe how dreadfully I was alarmed, when I found you determined as it were against living, and just on the verge of death. Charge not then your lover, nor accuse yourself of a crime of which I alone am guilty, since I foresaw the fatal effects, and yet did not prevent them.

I left you indeed against my inclination, but I was cruelly forced to it. Oh! could I have  
foreseen

foreseen the near approach of your destruction, I would have put every thing to the hazard sooner than have complied. Though certain as to the event, I was mistaken as to the time of it. I thought your weakness and your distemper a sufficient security during so short an absence, and forgot indeed the sad dilemma you was so soon to experience. I never considered that the weakness of your body left your mind more defenseless in itself, and therefore more liable to be betrayed. Mistaken as I was, I can scarce be angry with myself, since this very error is the means of saving your life. I am not, Eloisa, of that hardy temper which can reconcile me to thy loss, as thou wert to mine. Had I indeed lost you, my despair would have been endless; and, unfeeling as it may seem, I had rather you should live in sorrow, I had almost said in disgrace, than not to live at all.

But, my dear, my tender friend, why did you cruelly persist in your disquietude? Wherefore should your repentance exceed your crime, and your contempt fall on the object which least of all deserves it—yourself? Shall the weakness of one unguarded moment be attended with so black a train of baleful consequences? And are not the very dangers you have been struggling with, a self-evident demonstration of the greatness of your virtue? You lose yourself so entirely in the thought of your defeat, that you have no leisure to consider the triumphs by which it was preceded. If your trials have been

sharper, your conquests more numerous, and your resistance more frequent, than those who have escaped, have not you then, I would ask, done more for virtue than they? If you can find no circumstances to justify, dwell on those at least which extenuate and excuse you. I myself am a tolerable proficient in the art of love, and though my own temper secures me against its violent emotions, if ere I could have felt such a passion as your's my struggles would have been much fainter, my surrender more easy, and more dishonourable. Freed as I have been from the temptation, it reflects no honour on my virtue. You are the chaster of the two, though perhaps the most unfortunate.

You may perchance be offended that I am so unreserved; but unhappily your situation makes it necessary. I wish from my soul, what I have said were not applicable to you; for I detest pernicious maxims more than bad actions\*. If the deed were not already done, and I could have been so base to write, and you to read and hear these axioms, we both of us must be numbered in the wretched class of the abandoned. But, as matters stand at present, my duty as your friend requires this at my hands, and you must give me the hearing, or you are lost forever. For you still possess a thousand  
rare

\* This sentiment is a very just one. Disorderly passions *lead* to bad actions. But pernicious maxims corrupt the understanding, the very source and spring of good, and cut off the possibility of a return to virtue.

rare endowments, which a proper esteem of yourself can alone cultivate and preserve. Your real worth will ever exceed your own opinion of it.

Forbear then giving way to a self-diseesteem more dangerous and destructive than any weakness of which you could be guilty. Does true love debase the soul? No; nor can any crime, which is the result of that love, ever rob you of that enthusiastick ardour for truth and honour, which so raised you above yourself? Are there not spots visible in the sun? How many amiable virtues do you still retain, notwithstanding one error, one relaxation in your conduct? Will it make you less gentle, less sincere, less modest, less benevolent? Or will you be less worthy of all our admiration, of all our praise? Will honour, humanity, friendship, and tender love be less respected by you, or will you cease to revere even that virtue with which you are no longer adorned? No, my dear, my charming Eloisa, your faithful Clara bewails and yet adores thee; she is convinced that you can never fail admiring what you may be unable to practise. Believe me, you have much yet to lose before you can sink to a level with the generality of women.

After all, whatever have been your failings, you yourself are still remaining. I want no other comfort, I dread no other loss than you. Your first letter shocked me extremely, and would have thrown me into despair, had I not

been kindly relieved at the same time, by the arrival of your last. What! and could you leave your friend, could you think of going without me? You never mention this your greatest crime. It is this you should blush at; this too you should repent of. But the ungrateful Eloisa neglects all friendship, and thinks only of her love.

I am extremely impatient till I see you, and am continually repining at the slow progress of time. We are to stay at Lausanne six days longer; I shall then fly to my only friend, and will then either comfort or sympathise, wipe away her tears or share her sorrows. I flatter myself I shall be able to make you listen rather to the soothing tenderness of friendship, than the harsh language of reflexion. My dear cousin, we must bewail our misfortunes, and pour out our hearts to each other in silence; and, if possible, by dint of future exemplary virtue, bury in oblivion the memory of a failing which can never be blotted out by tears. Alas! how much do we now miss our poor Challiot!

## LETTER XXXI.

TO ELOISA.

**W**HAT an amazing mystery is the conduct and sentiments of the charming Eloisa! Tell me, I beseech you, by what surprising art you alone can unite such inconsistent counteracting emotions? Intoxicated as I am  
with

with love and delight, my soul is overwhelmed with grief and with despair. Amidst the most exquisite pleasures, I feel the most excruciating anxieties; nay, the very enjoyment of those pleasures is made the subject of self-accusation, and the aggravation of my distress. Heavens! what a torment to be able to indulge no one sensation but in a perpetual struggle of jarring passions: to be ever allaying the soothing tenderness of love with the bitter pangs of reflexion! A state of certain misery were a thousand times preferable to such doubtful disquietude. To what purpose is it, alas! that I myself have been happy, when your misfortune can torment me much more sensibly than my own? In vain do you attempt to disguise your own sad feelings, when your eyes will betray what your heart labours to conceal; and can those expressive eyes hide any thing from love's all penetrating sight? Notwithstanding your assumed gaiety, I see—I see the cankering anxiety; and your melancholy, veiled as you may think by a smile, affects me the more sensibly.

Surely you need no longer disguise any thing from me! While I was in your mother's room yesterday, she was accidentally called out, and left me alone. In the mean-time, I heard sighs that pierced my very soul. Could I, think you, be at a loss to guess the fatal cause? I went up to the place from which they seemed to proceed, and, on going into your chamber, perceived the goddess of my heart sitting on the floor, her



head reclining on a couch, and almost drowned in tears. Oh! had my blood thus trickled down, I should have felt less pain. Oh! how my soul melted at the sight! Remorse stung me to the quick. What had been my supreme bliss, became my excruciating punishment. I felt only then for you, and would have freely purchased with my life your former tranquillity. I would fain have thrown myself at your feet, kissed off your falling tears, and, burying them at the bottom of my heart, have died or wiped them away for ever; but your mother's return made me hasten back to my post, and obliged me to carry away your griefs, and that remorse which can never end but in death.

Oh! how am I sunk and mortified by your sorrow! How you must despise me if our union is the cause of your own self-contempt, and if what has been my supreme happiness proves the destruction of your peace? Be more just to yourself, my dearest Eloisa, and less prejudiced against the sacred ties which your own heart approved. Have you not acted in strict conformity to the purest laws of nature? Have you not voluntarily entered into the most solemn engagements? Tell me, then, what you have done, that all laws divine, as well as human, will not sufficiently justify? Is there any thing wanting to confirm the sacred tie, but the mere formal ceremony of a publick declaration? Be wholly mine, and you are no longer to blame. O my dear, my lovely wife, my tender and chaste  
companion,

companion, thou soother of all my cares, and object of all my wishes, oh! think it not a crime to have listened to your love; but rather think it will be one to disobey it for the future. To marry any other man, is the only imputation you can fix on your unimpeached honour. Would you be innocent, be ever mine. The tie that unites us is legal, is sacred. The disregarding this tie should be the principal object of your concern. Love from henceforward can be the only guardian of your virtue.

But, were the foundation of your sorrows ever so just, ever so necessary, why am I robbed of my property in them? Why should not my eyes too overflow and share your grief? You should have no one pang that I ought not to feel, no one anxiety that I ought not to share. My heart then, my jealous heart, but too justly reproaches you for every single tear you pour not into my bosom. Tell me, thou cold, dissembling fair, is not every secret of this kind an injury to my passion? Do you so soon forget the promise you so lately made? Oh! if you loved as I do, my happiness would comfort you as much as your concern affects me, and you would feel my pleasures as I share your anxieties!

But, alas! you consider me as a poor wretch whose reason is lost amidst the transports of delight; you are frightened at the violence of my joy, and compassionate the extravagance of my delirium, without considering that the utmost strength of human nature is not proof against

endless pleasures. How, think you, can a poor weak mortal support the ineffable delights of infinite happiness? How do you imagine he can bear such extatick raptures without being lost to every other consideration? Do not you know that reason is limited, and that no understanding can command itself at all times, and upon all occasions? Pity then, I beseech you, the distraction you occasion, and forgive the errors you yourself have thrown me into. I own freely to you, I am no longer master of myself. My soul is totally absorbed in your's. Hence am I the more fitly disposed to hear your sorrows, and the more worthy to participate them. Oh, my dearest Eloisa! no longer conceal any thing from your other self.

---

### LETTER XXXII.

#### ANSWER.

**T**HERE was a time, my dear friend, when the stile of our letters was as easy to be understood as the subject of them was agreeable and delightful: animated as they were with the warmth of a generous passion, they stood in need of no art to elevate, no colourings of a luxuriant fancy to heighten them. Native simplicity was their best, their only character. That time, alas! is now no more, it is gone beyond the hope of return; and the first melancholy proof that our hearts are less interested, is that our correspondence is become less intelligible.

You

You have been an eye-witness of my concern, and fondly therefore imagine you can discover its true source. You endeavour to relieve me by the mere force of elocution, and, while you are thinking to delude me, are yourself the dupe of your own artifice. The sacrifice I have made to my passion is a great one indeed; yet, great as it is, it provokes neither my sorrow nor my repentance. But I have deprived this passion of its most engaging circumstances—there lies the cause! that virtue which enchanted every thing around it, is itself vanished like a dream. Those inexpressible transports which at once gave vigour to our affections, and purity to our desires, are now no more. We have made pleasure our sole pursuit, and neglected happiness has bid us adieu for ever. Call but to mind those Halcyon days, when the fervency of our passion bore a proportion to its innocence, when the violence of our affections gave us weapons against itself! Then the purity of our intentions could reconcile us to restraint, while with comfort we reflected, that even these restraints served to heighten our desires. Compare those charming times with our present situation. Violent emotions, disquieting fears, endless suspicions, perpetual alarms, are the melancholy substitutes of our former gay companions. Where is that zeal for prudence and discretion which inspired every thought, directed every action, and refined the delicacy of our love? Is the passion itself altered or rather are we not most miserably changed?

Our

Our enjoyments were formerly both temperate and lasting; they are now degenerated into transports, resembling rather the fury of madness than the caresses of love. A pure and holy flame once glowed in our hearts, but now we are sunk into mere common lovers, through a blind gratification of sensual appetites. We can now think ourselves sufficiently happy, if jealousy can give a poignancy to those pleasures, which even the very brutes can taste without it.

This, my dear friend, is the subject which nearly concerns us both, and which indeed pains me more on your account than my own. I say nothing of the distress which is more immediately mine. Your disposition, tender as it is, can sufficiently feel it: consider the shame of my present situation, and, if you still love me, give a sigh to my lost honour. My crime is unattonable, my tears then I should hope will be as lasting as my dishonour. Do not you, then, who are the cause of this sorrow, seek to deprive me of this also. My only hope is founded in its continuance. Hard as my lot is, it would be still more deplorable if I could ever be comforted. The being reconciled to disgrace is the last, worst state of the abandoned.

I am but too well acquainted with the circumstances of my condition, and yet, amidst all the horror they inspire me with, I have one comfort left—It is indeed the only one, but it is agreeable. You, my dear friend, are its constant object; and since I dare no longer consider

myself, I take the greater satisfaction in thinking of you. The great share of self-esteem which you, alas ! have taken from me, is now transferred entirely to yourself ; and you are become the more dear to me for making me hate myself. Love, even the fatal love which has proved my destruction, is become the material circumstance in your favour. You are exalted while I am abased ; nay, my very abasement is the cause of your exaltation. Be henceforward then my only hope. It is your's to justify my crime by your conduct. Excuse it at least by your virtuous demeanour. May your merit cast a veil over my disgrace, and let the number of your virtues make the loss of mine less perceptible. Since I am no longer any thing, be thou my whole existence. The only honour I have left is solely centered in thee ; and while thou art in any degree respected, I can never be wholly despised or rejected.

However sorry I may be for the quick recovery of my health, yet my artifice will no longer stand me in any stead. My countenance will soon give the lie to my pretences, and I shall no longer be able to impose on my parents a feigned indisposition. Be quick then in taking the steps we have agreed on, before I am forced to resume my usual business in my family. I perceive but too plainly, that my mother is suspicious, and continually watches us. My father indeed seems to know nothing of the matter. His pride has been hitherto our security.

Perhaps

Perhaps he thinks it impossible that a mere tutor can be in love with his daughter. But, after all, you know his temper. If you do not prevent him, he will you: do not then, through a fond desire of gaining your usual access, banish yourself entirely from the possibility of a return. Take my advice, and speak to my mother in time. Pretend a multiplicity of engagements, in order to prevent your teaching me any longer; and let us give up the satisfaction of such frequent interviews that we may make sure, at least, of meeting sometimes. Consider, if you are once shut out, it is for ever; but if you can resolve to deny yourself for a time, you may then come when you please, and in time and by management may repeat your visits often, without any fear of suspicion. I will tell you this evening some other schemes I have in view for our more frequent meeting, and you will then be convinced that our *constant* cousin, at whose presence you have so often murmured, will now be very useful to two lovers, who, in truth, she ought never to have left alone..

---

## L E T T E R XXXIII.

FROM ELOISA.

AH! my dear friend, what a miserable asylum for lovers is a crowded assembly! What inconceivable torment, to see each other under the restraint of what is called good breeding!

ing! Surely absence were a thousand times more supportable! Is calmness and composure compatible with such emotions? Can the lover be self-consistent, or with what attention can he consider such a number of objects, when one alone possesses his whole soul? When the heart is fired, can the body be at rest? You cannot conceive the anxiety I felt, when I heard you were coming. Your name seemed a reproach to me, and I could not help imagining that the whole company's attention was fixed upon me alone. I was immediately lost, and blushed so exceedingly, that my cousin, who observed me, was obliged to cover me with her fan, and pretend to whisper me in the ear. This very artifice, simple as it was, increased my apprehensions, and I trembled for fear they should perceive it. In short, every, the most minute, circumstance was a fresh subject for alarm; never did I so fully experience the truth of that well-known axiom, that a guilty conscience needs no accuser.

Clara pretended to observe that you was equally embarrassed, uncertain what to do, not daring either to advance or retire, to take notice of me or not, and looking all round the room to give you a pretence, as she said, to look, at last, - on me. As I recovered from my confusion by degrees, I perceived your distress, till, by Mrs. Belon's coming up to you, you was relieved.

I per-



I perceive, my dear friend, that this manner of living, which is embittered with so much constraint, and sweetened with so little pleasure, is not suited to us. Our passion is too noble to bear perpetual chains. These publick assemblies are only fit for those who are strangers to love, or who can with ease dispense with ceremony. My anxieties are too disquieting, and your indiscretions too dangerous: I cannot always have a Mrs. Belon to make a convenient diversion. Let us return, let us return to that calm state of life from whence I have so inadvertently drawn you. It was that situation which gave rise and vigour to our passion; perhaps too it may be weakened by this dissipated manner of living. The truest passions are formed and nourished in retirement. In the busy circle of the world there is no time for receiving impressions, and even, when received, they are considerably weakened by the variety of avocations which continually occur. Retirement too best suits my melancholy, which, like my love, can be supported only by thy dear image. I had rather see you tender and passionate in my heart, than under constraint and dissipation in an assembly. There may perhaps come a time, when I shall be forced to a much closer retreat. O that such time were already come! Common prudence, as well as my own inclinations, require that I should inure myself by times to habits which necessity may demand. Oh! if the crime itself could produce the cause of its atonement! The  
pleasing

pleasing hopes of being one day——But I shall inadvertently say more than I am willing on the design I have in view. Forgive me this one secret, my dear friend; my heart shall never conceal any thing that would give you pleasure: yet you must, for a time, be ignorant of this. All I can say of it at present is, that love, which was the occasion of our misfortunes, ought to furnish us with relief. You may reason and comment upon this hint as much as you please; but I positively forbid all questions.

## L E T T E R XXXIV.

## A N S W E R.

*No, non vedrete mai  
Cambier gl' affetti miei,  
Bei lumi onde imparai  
A sospirar d'amor.*

No, no, the fond and faithful heart  
Can ne'er inconstant prove,  
Mean while the speaking eyes impart  
The expressive looks of love.

**H**OW greatly am I indebted to dear Mrs. Belon for the pleasure she procured me! Forgive me, my dearest Eloisa, when I tell you, that I even dared to take some pleasure in your distress, and that your very anxiety afforded me most exquisite delight. Oh! what raptures did I feel at those stolen glances, that downcast modesty, that care with which you avoided meet-  
ing

ing my eyes! What then, think you, was the employment of your too, too happy lover? Was he indeed conversing with Mrs. Belon? Did you really think so, my lovely Eloisa? Oh, no, enchanting fair! he was much more worthily employed. With what an amazing sympathy did my heart share each emotion of thine! With what a greedy impatience did I explore the beautiful symmetry of thy person! Thy love, thy charms, entirely filled my whole soul, which was hardly able to contain the ravishing idea. The only allay to all this pleasure, was, that I feasted at your expense, and felt the tender sensations which you, alas! was absolutely unable to participate.—Can I tell one word that Mrs. Belon said to me? Could I have told it, at the very time she was speaking? Do I know what answers I made? Or did she understand me at all? But indeed how could she comprehend the discourse of one who spoke without thinking, and answered without conceiving the question.

*Com' huom, che par ch' ascolti, e nulla intende.*

Like men who hear, but nothing understand.

I appeal to the event for a confirmation. She has since told all the world, and perhaps you among the rest, that I have not common sense; but what is still worse, not a single grain of wit, and that I am as dull and foolish as my books. But no matter how she thinks, or what she says of me. Is not Eloisa the sole mistress of my fate,

fate, and does not she alone determine my future rank and estimation? Let the rest of the world say of me what they think proper; myself, my understanding, and my accomplishments, all absolutely depend on the value you are pleased to fix on them.

Be assured neither Mrs. Belon, nor any superior beauty, could ever delude my attention from Eloisa. If, after all this, you still doubt my sincerity, and can injure my love and your own charms so much as still to suspect me, pray tell me, how I became acquainted with every minute particular of your conduct? Did not I see you shine among the inferior beauties, like the sun among the stars, that were eclipsed by your radiance? Did not I see the young fellows hovering about your chair, and buzzing in your ear? Did not I perceive you singled out from the rest of your sex to be the object of universal admiration? Did not I perceive their studied assiduities, their continual compliments, and your cold and modest indifference, infinitely more affecting than the most haughty demeanour you could possibly have assumed? Yes, my Eloisa, I saw the effect produced by the sight of your snowy delicate arm, when you pulled off your glove; I saw too that the young stranger who picked it up seemed tempted to kiss the charming hand that received it. And did not I see a still bolder swain whose steady stare obliged you to add another pin to your tucker? All this may perhaps convince you I was not so  
absent

absent as you imagine; not that I was in the least jealous; for I know your heart was not cast in such a mold as to be susceptible of every passion: nor will you, I hope, think otherwise of mine.

Let us then return to that calm, blest retirement, which I quitted with such regret. My heart finds no satisfaction in the tumultuous hurry of the world. Its empty, tinsel pleasures dispose it only to lament the want of more substantial joys the more feelingly, and make it prefer its own real sufferings to the melancholy train of continual disappointments. Surely, Eloisa, we may attain much more solid satisfaction, in any situation, than under our present restraint. And yet you seem to forget it. To be so near each other for a whole fortnight without meeting! Oh, it is an age of time to an enamoured enraptured heart! Absence itself would be infinitely more supportable. Tell me to what end can you make use of a discretion, which occasions more misfortunes than it is able to prevent? Of what importance can it be to prolong a life, in which every succeeding moment brings fresh punishment? Were it not better, yes, surely, a thousand times, to meet once more at all events, and then submit to our fate with resignation.

I own freely, my dear friend, I would fain know the utmost of the secret you conceal. There never was a discovery that could interest me so deeply: but all my endeavours are in vain. I can, however, be as silent as you could wish,  
and

and repress my forward curiosity. But may I not hope soon to be satisfied? Perhaps you are still in the castle building system. O, thou dear object of my affections! surely now it is high time to improve all our schemes into reality.

*P. S.* I had almost forgot to tell you that M. Roguin made me an offer of a company in the regiment he is raising for the king of Sardinia. I was highly pleased at this signal mark of that brave man's esteem, and, thanking him for his kindness, told him, the shortness of my fight and great love of a studious and sedentary life unfitted me for so active an employment. My love can claim no great share in this sacrifice. Every one, in my opinion, owes his life to his country, which therefore he should not risk in the service of those princes to whom he is no ways indebted; much less is he at liberty to let himself out for hire, and turn the noblest profession in the world to that of a vile mercenary. These maxims I claim by inheritance from my father; and happy enough should I be, could I imitate him as well in his steady adherence to his duty, and love to his country. He never would enter into the service of any foreign prince, but in the year 1712 acquired great reputation in fighting for his country. He served in many engagements, in one of which he was wounded, and at the battle of Wilmerghen was so fortunate as to take a standard from the enemy in the fight of General Sacconex.

L E T T E R

## L E T T E R XXXV.

FROM ELOISA.

**I** Could never think, my dear friend, that what I hinted of Mrs. Belon in jest could have excited so long or so serious an explanation. An over eagerness in one's own defense is sometimes productive of the very reverse of its intention, and fixes a lasting suspicion, instead of removing or lightening the accusation. The most trifling incidents, when attended to minutely, immediately grow up into events of importance. Our situation indeed secures us from making this case our own; for our hearts are too busy to listen to mere punctilios; though all disputes between lovers on points of little moment have too often a much deeper foundation than they imagine.

I am rather glad, however, of the opportunity which this accident has given me, of saying somewhat to you on the subject of jealousy—a subject which, alas, but too nearly concerns me. I see, my dear friend, by the similitude of our tempers and near alliance of our dispositions, that love alone will be the great business of our lives: and surely when such impressions as we feel have been once made, love must either extinguish or absorb every other passion. The least relaxation in our passion must inevitably produce a most dangerous lethargy—a total apathy—an indifference to every enjoyment, and  
a dis-

a disrelifh of every present comfort would very soon take place, if our affections were once cooled, and indeed life itself would then become a burthen. With respect to myself, you cannot but perceive, that the present transports of my passion could alone veil over the horror of my disastrous situation, and the sad alternative proposed to my choice, is the extravagance of love, or a death of despair. Judge, then, if after this I am able to determine a point on which the happiness or misery of my future life so absolutely depends.

If I may be allowed to know any thing of my own temper and disposition, though I am oftentimes distracted with violent emotions, it is but seldom that their influence can hurry me into action. My sorrows must have preyed on my heart for a long time before I could ever be prevailed on to discover the source of them to their authour; and being firmly persuaded that there can be no offense without intention, I would much rather submit to a thousand real subjects of complaint than ever come to an explanation. A disposition of this kind will neither easily give way to suspicion, nor be anxiously concerned at the jealousy of others. Oh! shield me, gracious heaven, from the tormenting pangs of groundless jealousy!—I am fully assured that your heart was made for mine, and no other; but self-deceit is of all others the most easy imposition: a transient liking is often mistaken for a real passion, as it is difficult



to distinguish the effects of sudden fancy from the result of a sincere and settled affection. If you yourself could doubt your own constancy without any reason, how could you blame me, were I capable of mistrusting you?—But that way leads to misery. So cruel a doubt as that would embitter the remainder of my life. I should sigh in secret without complaining, and die an inconsolable martyr to my passion.

But let me intreat you to prevent a misfortune, the idea of which shocks my very soul. Swear to me, my dear, dear friend! but not by love, for lovers oaths are never kept but when they are unnecessarily made; but swear by the sacred name of honour, which you highly revere, that I shall ever be the confident of your inmost thoughts, the repository of all your secrets, the witness of all your emotions, and if perchance (which gracious heaven avert!) if any change should take place in your affections, swear moreover that you will instantly inform me of so interesting a revolution. Think not to excuse yourself, by alledging that such a change is impossible. I believe—I hope—nay, I am well assured of your sincerity: oblige me, however, and prevent all false alarms; take from me the possibility of doubting, and secure my present peace. To hear my fate from you, how hard soever it might be, were much better than, through ignorance of the truth, to be perpetually exposed to the tortures of imaginary evils. Some comfort, some alleviation of my sorrows  
would

would arise from your remorse. Though my affections must cease, you would necessarily become the partner of my griefs: and even my own anxiety, when poured into your breast, would seem less distracting.

It is on this account, my dear friend, that I congratulate myself more especially on the fond choice of my heart; that honour strengthens and confirms the bond which affection first began; and that my security depends not on the violence of passion, but the more sober and settled dictates of principle: it is this which cements, at the same time that it ensures the affections; it is this virtue that must reconcile us to our woes. Had it been my sad misfortune to have fixed my affections on a lover void of principle, even supposing those affections should continue unchangeable, yet what security should I have of the continuance of his love? By what methods could I silence those perpetual misgivings that would be ever rising in my mind, and in what manner could I be assured that I was not imposed on, either by his artifice or my own credulity? But thou, my dear, my honourable friend, who hast no dark designs to cover, no secret frauds to practise, thou wilt, I am well assured, preserve the constancy thou hast avowed. You will never be shamed out of your duty, through the false bashfulness of owning an infidelity; and when you can no longer love your Eloisa, you will frankly tell her so—yes, you will say, My Eloisa,

H 2

I do

I do not—But I cannot—indeed, I cannot, finish the sentence.

What do you think of my proposal? I am sure it is the only one I can think of to pluck up jealousy by the root. There is a certain delicacy, a tender confidence, which persuades me to rely so entirely on your sincerity, as to make me incapable of believing any accusation which comes not from your own lips. These are the good effects I expect from your promise; for though I should easily believe that you are as fickle as the rest of your sex, yet I can never be persuaded that you are equally false and deceitful; and, however I might doubt of the constancy of your affections, I can never bring myself to suspect your honour. What a pleasure do I feel in taking precautions in this matter, which I hope will always be needless, and to prevent the very possibility of a change, which I am persuaded will never happen? Oh! how delightful it is to talk of jealousy to so faithful a lover! If I thought you capable of inconstancy, I should not talk thus. My poor heart would not be so discreet in the time of so much danger, and the least real distrust would deprive me of the prudence necessary for my security.

This subject, *honoured master*, may be more fully discussed this evening; for your two *humble scholars* are to have the honour of supping with you at my uncle's. Your learned commentaries on the Gazette have raised you so  
highly

highly in his esteem, that no great artifice was wanting to persuade him to invite you. The daughter has put her harpsichord in tune, the father has been poring over Lamberti, and I shall perhaps repeat the lesson I first learnt in Clarens grove. You who are a master of every science must adapt your knowledge and instructions to our several capacities. Mr. Orbe (who is invited you may be sure) has had notice given him to prepare a dissertation on the nature of the King of Naples's future homage; this will give us an opportunity of going into my cousin's apartment. There, vassal, on thy knees, before thy sovereign mistress, thy hands clasped in her's, and in the presence of her chancellor, thou shalt vow truth and loyalty on every occasion: I do not say eternal love, because that is a thing which no one can absolutely promise; but truth, sincerity, and frankness are in every one's disposal; to these therefore thou shalt swear. You need not vow eternal fealty; but you must and shall vow to commit no act of felonious intention, and at least to declare open war before you shake off the yoke. This done, you shall seal it with an embrace, and be owned and acknowledged for a true and loyal knight.

Adieu, my dear friend; the expectations I have formed of this evening have given me all these spirits. I shall be doubly blessed to see you a partaker of my joy.

## L E T T E R   XXXVI.

FROM ELOISA.

**K**ISS this welcome letter, and leap for joy at the news I am going to tell you: but be assured that though my emotions should prove less violent I am not a whit less rejoiced. My father being obliged to go to Bern on account of a law-suit, and from thence to Soleure for his pension, proposes to take my mother along with him, to which she is the more willing to consent, as she hopes to receive benefit from the journey and change of air. They were so obliging as to offer to take me along with them. I did not think proper to say all I thought on the occasion; but their not being able to find convenient room for me made them change their intentions with respect to my going, and they are now all endeavouring to comfort me for the disappointment. I was obliged to assume a very melancholy air, as if almost inconsolable; and, ridiculous as it is, I have dissembled so long, that I am sometimes apt to fancy I feel a real sorrow.

I am not, however, to be absolutely my own mistress while my parents are absent, but to live at my uncle's; so that during the whole time I shall be always with my *constant* cousin. My mother chooses to leave her own woman behind: Bab, therefore, will be considered as a kind of governess to me. But we need not be very apprehensive of those whom we have no need either  
to

to bribe or to trust, but who may be easily got rid of whenever they grow troublesome, by means of any trifling allurements.

You will readily conceive, I dare say, what opportunities we shall have of meeting during their absence; but our discretion must furnish those restraints which our situation has taken off for a while, and we must then voluntarily submit to that reserve, to which at present we are obliged by necessity. You must, when I am at my cousin's, come no oftener than you did before, for fear of giving offense, and I hope there will be no need of reminding you of the assiduous respect and civility, which her sex and the sacred laws of hospitality require; and that you yourself will sufficiently consider what is due to the friendship that gives an asylum to your love. I know your eager disposition; but I am convinced, at the same time, that there are bounds which can restrain it. Had you never governed your violence by the known laws of honour, you had not been troubled at present with any admonitions, at least with none from me.

But why that downcast look, that lowering air? Why repine at the restraints which duty prescribes? Be it thy Eloisa's care to soothe and soften them. Had you ever cause to repent of having listened to my advice? Near the flowery banks of the head of the river *Vevaise* there stands a solitary hut, which serves sometimes as a shelter to sportsmen, and surely may also

shelter lovers. Hard by the mansion-house which belongs to Mr. Orbe are several thatched dairy-houses, sufficiently remote, which may serve as a retirement for love and pleasure, ever the truest friends to rustick simplicity. The prudent milk-maids will keep the secret; for they have often need of secrecy. The streams which water the adjoining meadows are bordered with flowering shrubs, and charming shady groves, while at some little distance the thickness of the neighbouring woods seems to promise a more gloomy and secluded retreat.

*Al bel seggio riposo, ombroso e fosco,  
Ne mai pastori appressan, ne bisolci.*

Some sweet recess within the dusky shade,  
Which shepherd swain nor cow-herd e'er approach.

In this delightful place, no vestiges are seen of human toil, no appearance of studied and laborious art; every object presents only a view of the tender care of nature, our common mother. Here then, my dear friend, we shall be only under nature's directions, and know no other law but her's. At Mr. Orbe's invitation, Clara has already persuaded her father to take the diversion of hunting for two or three days in this part of the world, and to carry the two inseparables with him. These inseparables have others likewise closely connected with them, as you know but too well. The one, assuming the character of master of the house, will consequently do the honours, while the other with  
less

less parade will do those of a dairy-house for his Eloisa, and this rural hut, dedicated to love, will be to them the Temple of Gnidus. To succeed the more effectually in this charming project, there will be wanting a little previous contrivance, which may be easily settled between us, and the very consideration of which will form a part of those pleasures they are intended to produce.—Adieu, my dear life! I leave off abruptly for fear of being surpris'd. The heart of thy devoted Eloisa anticipates, alas! too eagerly the pleasures of the dairy-house.

P. S. Upon second thoughts, I begin to be of opinion that we may meet every day without any great danger; that is, at my cousin's every other day, and in the field on every intermediate one.

---

## LETTER XXXVII.

FROM ELOISA.

THEY left me this very morning—my tender father, and still sinder mother, took leave of me but just now; overwhelmed their beloved daughter (too unworthy, alas! of all their affection) with repeated caresses. For my own part, indeed, I did not feel much reluctance at this separation! I embraced them with an outward appearance of concern, while my ungrateful and unnatural heart was leaping within me for joy. Where, alas! is now that happy

H 5

time



time, when I led an innocent life under their continual observation, when my only joy was their approbation—my only concern their absence or neglect? Behold now the melancholy reverse! Guilty and fearful as I now am, the very thought of them gives me pain, and the recollection of myself makes me blush with confusion. All my virtuous ideas now vanish away like a dream, and leave in their stead empty disquietudes and barren remorse, which, bitter as they are, are nevertheless insufficient to lead me to repentance. These cruel reflexions have brought on all that sorrow which the taking leave of my parents was unable to effect: and yet immediately on their departure I felt an agony of grief. While Bab was setting things to rights after them, I went into my mother's room, as it were mechanically, without knowing what I did, and seeing some of her clothes lying scattered about, I took them up one by one, kissed them, and bathed them with my tears. This vent to my anxiety afforded me present ease, and it was some comfort to me to reflect that I was still awake to nature's soft emotions, and that her gentle fires were not entirely extinguished in my soul.—In vain, cruel tyrant! dost thou seek to subject this weak and tender heart, to thy absolute dominion: notwithstanding all thy fond illusions, it still retains the sentiments of duty, still cherishes and reveres parental rights, much more sacred than thy own.

Forgive

Forgive me, my dear friend, these involuntary emotions, nor imagine that I carry these reflexions farther than I ought. Love's soft moments are not to be expected amidst the tortures of anxiety. I cannot conceal my sufferings from you, and yet I would not overwhelm you with them; nay, you must know them, though not to share, yet to soften them. But into whose bosom dare I pour them, if not into thine! Are not you my faithful friend, my prudent counsellor, my tender comfort? Have you not been fostering in my soul the love of virtue, when, alas! that virtue itself was no longer in me? How often should I have sunk under the pressure of my afflictions had not thy pitying hand relieved me from my sorrows, and wiped away my tears? It is your tender care alone supports me. I dare not abase myself while you continue to esteem me, and I flatter myself, that if I were indeed contemptible, none of you would or could so honour me with your regard.—I am flying to the arms of my dear cousin, or rather to the heart of a tender sister, there to repose the load of grief with which I am oppressed. Come thither this evening, and contribute to restore to me that peace and serenity, of which I have long been deprived.

## L E T T E R XXXVIII.

TO ELOISA.

**N**O, Eloisa, it is impossible! I can never bear to see you every day, if I am always to be charmed in the manner I was last night. My affection must ever bear proportion to the discovery of your beauties, and you are an inexhaustible source of endless wonder and delight, beyond my utmost hopes, beyond my most sanguine expectations! What a delicious evening to me was the last! what amazing raptures did I feel! O enchanting sorrow! How infinitely doth the pleasing languor of a heart softened by concern surpass the boisterous pleasures, the foolish gaiety, and the extravagant joy with which a boundless passion inspires the ungovernable lover! O peaceful bliss! never, never shall thy pleasing idea be torn from my memory! Heavens, what an enchanting sight! it was ecstasy itself, to see two such perfect beauties embrace each other so affectionately; your face reclined upon her breast, mixing your tender tears together, and bedewing that charming bosom, just as heaven refreshes a bed of new-blown flowers. I grew jealous of such a friendship, and thought there was something more interesting in it than even in love itself. I was grieved at the impossibility of consoling you, without disturbing you at the same time by the violence of my emotion. No, nothing, nothing upon

upon earth is capable of exciting so pleasing a sensation as your mutual caresses. Even the sight of two lovers would have been less delightful.

Oh! how could I have admired, nay, adored your dear cousin, if the divine Eloisa herself had not taken up all my thoughts! You throw, my dearest angel, an irresistible charm on every thing that surrounds you. Your gown, your gloves, fan, work, nay, every thing that was the object of my outward senses, enchanted my very soul, and you yourself completed the enchantment. Forbear, forbear, my dear Eloisa, nor deprive me of all sensation, by making my enjoyment too exquisite. My transports approach so nearly to phrenzy, that I begin to be apprehensive I shall lose my reason. Let me, at least, be sensible of my felicity—let me at least have a rational idea of those raptures, which are more sublime, and more penetrating, than my glowing imagination could paint.—How can you think yourself disgraced? This very thought is a sure proof that your senses likewise are affected. Oh, you are too perfect for frail mortality! I should believe you to be of a more exalted, purer species, if the violence of my passion did not clearly evince that we are of a kinder frame. No human being conceives your excellence; you are unknown even to yourself; my heart alone knows and can estimate its Eloisa. Were you only an idol of worship, could you have been enraptured with the dull homage of admiring

miring mortals? Were you only an angel, how much would you lose of your real value!

Tell me, if you can, how such a passion as mine is capable of increasing? I am ignorant of the means, yet am but too sensible of the fact. You are, indeed, ever present with me, yet there are times in which your beautiful image is peculiarly before me, and haunts me as it were with such amazing assiduity, that neither time nor place can deprive me of the delightful object. I even believe you left it with me in the dairy-house, in the conclusion of your last letter; for, since you mentioned that rural spot, I have been continually rambling in the fields, and am always insensibly led towards the place. Every time I behold it, it appears still more enchanting.

*Non vide il mondo sì leggiadri rami,  
Ne mosse'l vento mai sì verdi frondi.*

The world affords not such a charming scene,  
Of gently-waving trees and hedge-rows green.

I find the country more delightful, the verdure fresher and livelier, the air more temperate and serene than ever I did before; even the feathered songsters of the sky seem to tune their tender throats with more harmony and pleasure; the murmuring rills invite to love-inspiring dalliance, while the blossoms of the vine regale me from afar with the choicest perfumes. Some secret charm enlivens every object, or raises my sensations to a more exquisite degree. I am  
tempted

tempted to imagine that even the earth adorns herself to make a nuptial bed for your happy lover, worthy of the passion which he feels, and the goddess he adores.—O, my Eloisa, my dearer, better half! let us immediately add to these beauties of the spring, the presence of two faithful lovers. Let us carry the sentiments of true pleasure to places which comparatively afford but an empty idea of it. Let us animate all nature, which is absolutely dead without the genial warmth of love. Am I yet to stay three days, three whole days! Oh! what an age to a fond expecting lover! Intoxicated with my passion, I wait that happy moment with the most melancholy impatience. Oh! how happy should we be, if heaven would annihilate those tedious intervals which retard the blissful moment!

---

## L E T T E R XXXIX.

FROM ELOISA.

**T**HERE is not a single emotion of your heart which I do not share with the tenderest concern. But, talk no more of pleasure, whilst others, who have deserved much better than either of us, are suffering under the pressure of the severest affliction. Read the enclosed, and then be composed if you can. I, indeed, who am well acquainted with the good girl who wrote it, was not able to proceed without shedding tears of sorrow and compassion. The  
recollection

recollection it gave me of my blameable negligence touched my very soul; and, to my bitter confusion, I perceive but too plainly that a forgetfulness of the principal points of my duty has extended itself to all those of inferior consideration. I had promised this poor child to take care of her: I recommended her to my mother, and kept her in some degree under my continual inspection: but, alas! when I became unable to protect myself, I abandoned her too, and exposed her to worse misfortunes than even I myself have fallen into. I shudder to think that had I not been roused from my carelessness, in two days time my ward would have been ruined; her own indigence, and the snares of others, would have ruined—for ever ruined, a modest and discreet girl, who may hereafter possibly prove an excellent parent. O, my dear friend! can there be such vile creatures upon earth, who would extort from the depth of misery what the heart alone should give? That any one can submit to receive the tender embraces of love from the arms of famine itself!

Can you be unmoved at my Fanny's filial piety, at the integrity of her sentiments, and the simplicity of her innocence? But are you not affected with the uncommon tenderness of the lover, who will sell even himself to assist his poor mistress? Would not you think yourself too happy to be the instrument of uniting a couple so well formed for each other? If we, alas! (whose situation so much resembles their's) do  
not

not compassionate lovers who are united by nature, but divided by misfortunes, where else can they seek relief with a probability of success? For my own part, I have determined to make some amends for my neglect, by contributing my utmost endeavours to unite these two young people. Heaven will, I hope, assist the generous undertaking, and my success may prove a good omen to us. I desire, nay, conjure you, by all that is good and dear to you, to set out for Neuchatel the very moment you receive this, or tomorrow morning at farthest. You will then go to M. Merveilleux, and try to obtain the young man's discharge; spare neither money nor entreaties. Take Fanny's letter along with you. No breast, that is not absolutely void of all sentiments of humanity, can read it without emotion. In short, ~~whatever~~ money it may cost, whatever pleasure of your own it may defer, be sure not to return without an entire discharge for Claudius Anet. If you do, you may be assured, I shall never enjoy a single moment's satisfaction during the remainder of my life.

I am aware that your heart will be raising many objections to the proposal I have made; but can you think that I have not foreseen all those objections? Yet, notwithstanding, I repeat my request; for virtue must either be an empty name, or it requires of us some mortifying self-denials. Our appointment, my friend, my dear, dear friend, though lost for the present, may be made again and again. A few hours of  
the



the most agreeable intercourse vanish like a flash of lightening; but when the happiness of an honest couple is in your power, think, only think, what you are preparing for hereafter, if you neglect the opportunity: on the use, then, of the present time depends an eternity of contentment or remorse. Forgive such frequent repetitions; they are the overflowings of my zeal. I have said more than was necessary to any honest man, and an hundred times too much to my dear friend. I well know how you abominate that cruel turn of mind which hardens us to the calamities of others. You yourself have told me a thousand times, that he is a wretch indeed who scruples giving up one day of pleasure to the duties of humanity.

---

## L E T T E R XL.

FROM FANNY REGNARD TO ELOISA.

HONOURED MADAM,

**F**OR GIVE this interruption, from a poor girl in despair, who, being ignorant what to do, has taken the liberty of addressing herself to your benevolence; for you, Madam, are never weary of comforting the afflicted, and I am so unfortunate, alas! that I have tired all but God Almighty and you with my complaints. I am very sorry I was obliged to leave the mistress you had been so kind to put me apprentice to, but  
on

On my mother's death (which happened this winter) I was obliged to return home to my poor father, who is confined to his bed with the palsy.

I have never forgotten the advice you gave my mother, to try to settle me with some honest man, who might be of use to the family. Claud Anet (formerly in your father's service) is a very sober discreet person, master of a good trade, and has taken a liking to me. Having been already so much indebted to your bounty, I did not dare to apply to you for any further assistance, so that he has been our only support during the whole winter. He was to have married me this spring, and indeed had set his heart upon it; but I have been so teased for three years rent due last Easter, that, not knowing where to get so much money, the young man listed at once in M. Merveilleux's company, and brought me all the money he had received for inlisting. M. Merveilleux stays at Neufchatel about a week longer, and Claud Anet is to set out in three or four days with the rest of the recruits. So that we have neither time nor money to marry, and he is going to leave me without any help. If, through your interest, or the Baron's, five or six weeks longer might be given us, we would endeavour in that time either to get married, or repay the young man his money. But I am sure he can never be prevailed on to take the money again.

I re-

I received this morning some great offers from a very rich gentleman, but, thank God, I have refused them. He told me, he would come again to-morrow to know my mind; but I desired him not to give himself so much trouble, and that he knew it already. By God's assistance, he shall have the same answer to-morrow. I might indeed apply to the parish; but one is so despised after that, that my misfortunes are better than such a relief, and Claud Anet has too much pride to think of me after this. Forgive the liberty I have taken; you are the only person I could think of, and I feel myself so distressed, that I can write no more about it.

I am,

Honoured Madam,

Your humble Servant to command,

FANNY REGNARD.

## L E T T E R X L I.

### A N S W E R.

I Have been wanting in point of memory, and you, Fanny, have been deficient in your confidence in me; in short, we have both of us been to blame, but I am the most inexcusable. However, I shall now endeavour to repair the injury which my neglect may have occasioned. Bab, the bearer of this, has orders to satisfy your  
more

more immediate wants, and will be with you again to-morrow, for fear the gentleman should return. My cousin and I propose calling on you in the evening; for I know you cannot leave your poor father alone; and indeed I shall be glad of this opportunity, to inspect your œconomy a little.

You need not be uneasy on Claud Anet's account: my father is from home, but we shall do all we can towards his immediate release. Be assured, that I will never forget you, nor your generous lover. Adieu, my dear, and may God ever bless you. I think you much in the right for not having recourse to publick charity. Such steps as those are never to be taken, while the hearts and purses of benevolent individuals are open and accessible.

---

## L E T T E R XLII.

T O E L O I S A.

**I** Have received your letter, and shall set out this instant.—This is all the answer I shall make. O Eloisa! how could you cruelly suppose me possessed of such a selfish, unfeeling heart? But you command, and shall be obeyed. I would rather die a thousand times than forfeit your esteem.

L E T T E R

## L E T T E R XLIII.

TO ELOISA.

**I** Arrived at Neufchatel yesterday morning, and on enquiry was told that M. Merveilleux was just gone into the country. I followed him immediately, but as he was out a hunting all day, I was obliged to wait till the evening, before I could speak with him. I told him the cause of my journey, and desired he would set a price on Claud Anet's discharge; to which he raised a number of objections. I then concluded that the most effectual method of answering them, would be to increase my offers, which I did in proportion as his difficulties multiplied. But, finding, after some time, that I was not likely to succeed, I took my leave, having previously desired the liberty to wait on him the next morning; determined in my own mind not to stir out of the house a second time till I had obtained my request by dint of larger offers, frequent importunity, or in short by whatever means I could think most effectual. I rose early next morning to put this resolution in practice, and was just going to mount my horse, when I received a note from M. Merveilleux with the young man's discharge, in due form and order. The contents of the note were these:

“ ENCLOSED, Sir, is the discharge you  
 “ request. I denied it to your pecuniary offers,  
 “ but have granted it in consideration of your cha-

“ ritable design, and desire you would not think  
“ that I am to be bribed into a good action.”

You will easily conceive, by your own satisfaction, what joy I must have felt. But, why is it not as complete as it ought to be? I cannot possibly avoid going to thank, and indeed to reimburse M. Merveilleux: and if this visit, necessary as it is, should retard my return a whole day, as I am apprehensive it will, is he not generous at my expense? But, no matter: I have done my duty to Eloisa, and am satisfied. Oh! what a happiness it is thus to reconcile benevolence to love! to unite in the same action the charms of conscious virtue with the soft sensations of the tenderest affection. I own freely, Eloisa, that I began my journey full of sorrow and impatience: I even dared to reproach you with feeling too much the calamities of others, while you remained insensible to my sufferings, as if I alone, of all created beings, had been unworthy your compassion. I thought it quite barbarous in you, after having disappointed me of my sweetest hopes, thus unnecessarily and wantonly, as it were, to deprive me of a happiness which you had voluntarily promised. As these secret repinings are now happily changed into a fund of contentment and solid satisfaction, to which I have hitherto lived a stranger, I have already enjoyed the recompense you bade me expect: you spoke from experience. Oh! what an amazing kind of empire is your's, which can  
convert

convert even disappointment into pleasure, and cause the same satisfaction in obeying you, as could result from the greatest self-gratification ! O my dearest, kindest Eloisa, you are indeed an angel ; if any thing could be wanting to confirm the truth of this, your unbounded empire over my soul would be a sufficient confirmation. Doubtless it partakes much more of the divine nature, than of the human ; and who can resist the power of heaven ? And to what purpose should I cease to love you, since you must ever remain the object of my adoration ?

*P. S.* According to my calculation we shall have five or six days to ourselves before your mother returns. Will it be impossible for you, during this interval, to undertake a pilgrimage to the dairy-house ?

## LETTER XLIV.

FROM ELOISA.

**R**EPINE not, my dear friend, at this unexpected return. It is really more advantageous to us than you can possibly imagine ; and, indeed, supposing our contrivances could have effected what our regard to appearance has induced us to give up, we should have succeeded no better. Judge what would have been the consequence, had we followed our inclinations. I should have gone into the country but the very evening before my mother's return, should have

have been sent for thence, before I could have possibly given you any notice, and must consequently have left you in the most dreadful anxiety; we should have parted just on the eve of our imaginary bliss, and the disappointment would have been cruelly aggravated by the near approach of our felicity. Besides, notwithstanding the utmost precautions we could have taken, it would have been known that we were both in the country; perhaps, too, they might have heard that we were together; it would have been suspected at least, and that were enough. An imprudent avidity of the present moment, would have deprived us of every future resource, and the remorse for having neglected such an act of benevolence would have imbibtered the remainder of our lives.

Compare, then, I beseech you, our present situation with that I have been describing. First, your absence has been productive of several good effects. My Argus will not fail to tell my mother, that you have been but seldom at my cousin's. She is acquainted with the motives of your journey; this may probably prove a means of raising you in her esteem, and how, think you, can they conceive it possible that two young people who have an affection for each other should agree to separate at the very time they are left most at liberty? What an artifice have we employed to destroy suspicions which are but too well founded! The only stratagem in my opinion consistent with honour, is the carry-



ing our discretion to such an incredible height, that what is in reality the utmost effort of self-denial, may be mistaken for a token of indifference. How delightful, my dear friend, must a passion thus concealed be to those who enjoy it! Add to this the pleasing consciousness of having united two despairing lovers, and contributed to the happiness of so deserving a couple. You have seen my Fanny: tell me, is not she a charming girl? does she not really deserve every thing you have done for her? Is not she too beautiful and too unfortunate to remain long unmarried, without some disaster? And do you think that Claud Anet, whose natural good disposition has miraculously preserved him during three years service, could have resolution to continue three years more without becoming as perfidious and as wretched as all those of that profession? Instead of that they love, and will be united; they are poor, and will be relieved; they are honest, and will be enabled to continue so! for my father has promised them a competent provision. What a number of advantages then has your kindness procured to them, and to ourselves; not to mention the additional obligations you have conferred on me! Such, my friend, are the certain effects of sacrifices to virtue; which, though they are difficult to perform, are always grateful in remembrance. No one ever repented of having performed a good action.

I suppose, you will say, with my *constant cousin*, that all this is mere *preaching*, and indeed it is  
but

but too true that I no more practise what I preach than those who are preachers by profession. However, if my discourses are not so elegant, I have the satisfaction to find that they are not so entirely thrown away as their's. I do not deny it, my dear friend, that I would willingly add as many virtues to your character, as a fatal indulgence to love has taken away from mine; and Eloisa herself having forfeited my regard, I would gladly esteem her in you. Perfect affection is all that is required on your part, and the consequence will flow easy and natural. With what pleasure ought you to reflect, that you are continually increasing those obligations, which love itself engages to pay!

My cousin has been made privy to the conversation you had with her father, about Mr. Orbe, and seems to think herself as much indebted to you, as if we had never been obliged to her in our lives. Gracious heaven, how every particular incident contributes to my happiness! How dearly am I beloved, and how am I charmed with their affection! Father, mother, friend, and lover, all conspire in their tender concern for my happiness, and, notwithstanding my eager endeavours to requite them, I am always either prevented or outdone. It should seem, as if all the tenderest feelings in nature verged towards my heart, whilst I, alas! have but one sensation to enjoy them.

I forgot to mention a visit you are to receive to-morrow morning. 'Tis from Lord B—, lately

come from Geneva, where he has resided about eight months: he told me he had seen you at Sion, in his return from Italy. He found you very melancholy, but speaks of you in general in the manner you yourself would wish, and in which I have long thought. He commended you so a-propos to my father yesterday, that he has prejudiced me already very much in his favour: and indeed his conversation is sensible, lively, and spirited. In reciting heroick actions, he raises his voice, and his eyes sparkle, as men usually do who are capable of performing the deeds they relate. He speaks also emphatically in matters of taste, especially of the Italian musick, which he extols to the very skies. He often reminded me of my poor brother. But his lordship seems not to have sacrificed much to the Graces; his discourse in general is rather nervous than elegant, and even his understanding seems to want a little polishing.

---

## L E T T E R XLV.

T O E L O I S A.

I Was reading your last letter, the second time only, when Lord B—— came in. But, as I have so many other things to say, how can I think of his lordship? When two people are entirely delighted and satisfied with each other, what need is there of a third person? However, since you seem to desire it, I will tell you what  
I know

I know of him. Having passed the Semplon, he came to Sion, to wait for a chase which was to come from Geneva to Brigue; and as want of employment often makes men seek society, we soon became acquainted, and as intimate as the reserve of an Englishman, and my natural love of retirement, would permit. Yet we soon perceived, that we were adapted to each other; there is a certain union of souls which is easily discernable. At the end of eight days, we were full as familiar as we ever were afterwards, and as two Frenchmen would have been in the same number of hours. He entertained me with an account of his travels; and knowing he was an Englishman, I immediately concluded he would have talked of nothing but pictures or buildings. But I was soon pleased to find, that his attention to the politer arts had not made him neglect the study of men and manners: yet whatever he said on those subjects of refinement was judicious, and in taste, but with modesty and diffidence. As far as I could perceive, his opinions seemed rather founded on reflexion than science, and that he judged from effects, rather than rules, which confirmed me in my idea of his excellent understanding. He spoke to me of the Italian musick with as much enthusiasm as he did to you, and indeed gave me a specimen of it; his valet plays extremely well on the violin, and he himself tolerably on the violoncello. He picked out what he called some very affecting pieces, but whether it was by

being unused to it, or that musick, which is so soothing in melancholy, loses all its soft charms when our grief is extreme, I must own I was not much delighted; the melody was agreeable, but wild, and without the least expression.

Lord B—— was very anxious to know my situation. I accordingly told him as much as was necessary for him to know. He made an offer of taking me with him into England, and proposed several advantages, which were no inducements to me in a country where Eloisa was not. He had formerly told me that he intended to pass the winter at Geneva, the summer at Lausanne, and that he would come to Vevai before he returned into Italy.

Lord B—— is of a lively, hasty temper, but virtuous and steady. He piques himself on being a philosopher, and upon those principles which we have frequently discussed. But I really believe his own disposition leads him naturally to that which he imagines the effect of method and study, and that the varnish of stoicism, with which he glosses over all his actions, only covers the inclinations of his heart.

I do not know what want of polish you have found in his manner; it is really not very engaging, and yet I cannot say there is any thing disgusting in it. Though his address is not so easy and open as his disposition, and he seems to despise the trifling punctilios of ceremony, yet his behaviour in the main is very agreeable: though he has not that reserved and cautious politeness,

politeness, which confines itself alone to mere outward form, and which our young officers learn in France, yet he is less solicitous about distinguishing men and their respective situations at first sight, than he is assiduous in paying a proper degree of respect to every one in general. Shall I tell you the plain truth? Want of elegance is a failing which women never overlook, and I fear that, in this instance, Eloisa has been a woman for once in her life.

Since I am now upon a system of plain-dealing, give me leave to assure you, my pretty preacher, that it is to no purpose that you endeavour to invalidate my pretensions, and that sermons are but poor food for a famished lover. Think, think of all the compensations you have promised, and which indeed are my due; but though every thing you have said is exceeding just and true, one visit to the dairy-house would have been a thousand times more agreeable.

## L E T T E R XLVI.

FROM ELOISA.

**W**HAT, my friend, still the dairy-house? Surely this dairy-house sits heavy on your heart. Well, cost what it will, I find you must be humoured. But, is it possible you can be so attached to a place you never saw, that no other will satisfy you? Do you think that love, who raised Armida's palace in the midst of a desert, cannot give us a dairy-house in the town? Fanny

is going to be married, and my father, who has no objection to a little parade and mirth, is resolved it shall be a publick wedding. You may be sure there will be no want of noise and tumult, which may not prove unfavourable to a private conversation. You understand me. Do not you think it will be charming to find the pleasures we have denied ourselves in the effect of our benevolence?

Your zeal to apologize for Lord B—— was unnecessary, as I was never inclined to think ill of him. Indeed, how should I judge of a man, with whom I spent only one afternoon? or how can you have been sufficiently acquainted with him in the space of a few days? I spoke only from conjecture; nor do I suppose that you can argue on any better foundation: his proposals to you are of that vague kind of which strangers are frequently lavish, from their being easily eluded, and because they give them an air of consequence. But your character of his lordship is another proof of our natural vivacity, and of that ease with which you are prejudiced for or against people at first sight. Nevertheless, we will think of his proposals more at leisure. If love should favour my project, perhaps something better may offer. O, my dear friend, patience is exceeding bitter; but its fruits are most delightfully sweet.

To return to our Englishman: I told you, he appeared to have a truly great and intrepid soul; but that he was rather sensible than agreeable.

You

You seem almost of the same opinion, and then, with that air of masculine superiority, always visible in our humble admirers, you reproach me with being a woman once in my life; as if a woman ought ever to belie her sex.

Have you forgot our dispute, when we were reading your *Republick of Plato*, about the moral distinction between the sexes? I have still the same difficulty to suppose there can be but one common model of perfection for two beings so essentially different. Attack and defense, the assurance of the men, and modesty of the women, are by no means effects of the same cause, as the philosophers have imagined; but natural institutions which may be easily accounted for, and from which may be deduced every other moral distinction. Besides, the designs of nature being different in each, their inclinations, their perceptions ought necessarily to be directed according to their different views: to till the ground, and to nourish children, require very opposite tastes and constitutions. A higher stature, stronger voice and features, seem, indeed, to be no indispensable marks of distinction; but this external difference evidently indicates the intention of the Creator in the modification of the mind. The soul of a perfect woman and a perfect man ought to be no more alike than their faces. All our vain imitations of your sex are absurd; they expose us to the ridicule of sensible men, and discourage the tender passions we were made to inspire. In short, unless we are near six feet



high, have a bafe voice, and a beard upon our chins, we have no bufinefs to pretend to be men.

What novices are you lovers in the art of reproaching! You accufe me of a fault which I have not committed, or of which, however, you are as frequently guilty as myfelf; and you attribute it to a defect of which I am proud. But, in return for your plain dealing, fuffer me to give you my plain and fincere opinion of your fincerity. Why, then, it appears to be a refinement of flattery, calculated, under the difguife of an apparent freedom of expreffion, to juftify to yourfelf the enthuftick praifes, which, upon every occafion, you are fo liberally pleafed to beftow on me. You are fo blinded by my imaginary perfeftions, that you can difcover no real ones to excufe your preposfeffion in my favour.

Believe me, my friend, you are not qualified to tell me my faults. Do you think the eyes of love, piercing as they are, can difcover imperfeftions? No, it is a power which belongs only to honeft friendship, and in that your pupil Clara is much your fuperior. Yes, my dear friend, you fhall praife me, admire me, and think me charming, and beautiful, and fpotlefs. Your praifes pleafe without deceiving me; I know it to be the language of error, and not of deceit; that you deceive yourfelf, but have no defign to deceive me. O, how delightful are the illufions of love! and furely all its flattery is truth; for the heart fpeaks, though the judgement is filent.

The lover who praises in us that which we do not possess, represents our qualities truly as they appear to him; he speaks a falsity without being guilty of a lie; he is a flatterer without meanness, and one may esteem without believing him.

I have heard, not without some little palpitation, a proposal to invite two philosophers to-morrow to supper. One is my Lord B——, and the other a certain sage, whose gravity hath sometimes been a little discomposed at the feet of a young disciple. Do you know the man? If you do, pray, desire that he will to-morrow preserve the philosophick decorum a little better than usual. I shall take care to order the young damsel to cast her eyes downward, and to appear in his as little engaging as possible.

## L E T T E R XLVII.

TO ELOISA.

**M**ALICIOUS girl! Is this the circumspection you promised? Is it thus you spare my heart, and draw a veil over your charms? How often did you break your engagements! First, as to your dress; for you were in an undress, though you well know that you are never more bewitching. Secondly, that modest air and sweetness in your manner, so calculated for the gradual display of all your graces. Your conversation more refined, more studied, more witty

than usual, which made every one so uncommonly attentive, that they seemed impatiently to anticipate every sentence you spoke. That delightful air you sung below your usual pitch, which rendered your voice more enchantingly soft, and which made your song, though French, please even Lord E—. Your down-cast eyes, and your timid glances, which pierced me to the soul; in a word, that inexpressible enchantment which seemed spread over your whole person, to turn the brains of the company, even without the least apparent design. For my part, I know not how to behave; but, if this is the method you take to be *as little engaging as possible*, I assure you, however, it is being infinitely too much so for people to retain their senses in your company.

I doubt much whether the poor English philosopher has not perceived a little of the same influence. After we had conducted your cousin home, seeing us all in high spirits, he proposed that we should retire to his lodgings, and have a little musick, and a bowl of punch. While his servants were assembling, he never ceased talking of you; but with so much warmth, that, I confess, I should not hear his praise from your lips with as much pleasure as you did from mine. Upon the whole, I am not fond of hearing any body speak of you, except your cousin. Every word seems to deprive me of a part of my secret, or my pleasure, and whatever they say appears so suspicious, or is so infinitely short of  
what

what I feel, that I would hear no discourse upon the subject but my own.

It is not that, like you, I am at all inclined to jealousy: no, I am better acquainted with the soul of my Eloisa; and I have certain sureties that exclude even the possibility of your inconstancy. After your protestations, I have nothing more to say concerning your other pretenders; but this Lord, Eloisa—equality of rank—your father's prepossession—In short, you know my life is depending. For Heaven's sake, deign to give me a line or two upon this subject—one single word from Eloisa, and I shall be satisfied for ever.

I passed the night in attending to, and playing, Italian musick; for there were some duets, and I was forced to take a part. I dare not yet tell you what effect it had on me; but, I fear, I fear, the impression of last night's supper influenced the harmony, and that I mistook the effect of your enchantment for the power of musick. Why should not the same cause which made it disagreeable at Sion, give it a contrary effect in a contrary situation? Are not you the source of every affection of my soul, and am I proof against the power of your magick? If it had really been the musick which produced the enchantment, every one present must have been affected in the same manner; but whilst I was all rapture and extasy, Mr. Orbe sat snoring in an arm chair, and, when I awoke him with my exclamations, all the praise he bestowed  
was,

was, to ask whether your cousin understood Italian.

All this will be better explained to-morrow ; for we are to have another concert this evening. His lordship is determined to have it complete, and has sent to Lausanne for a second violin, who, he says, is a tolerable hand. On my part, I shall carry some French *scenes* and cantatas.

When I first returned to my room I sunk into my chair, quite exhausted and overcome ; for want of practice I am but a poor rake : but I no sooner took my pen to write to you, than I found myself gradually recover. Yet I must endeavour to sleep a few hours. Come with me, my sweet friend, and do not leave me whilst I slumber : but, whether thy image brings me pain or pleasure, whether it reminds me, or not, of Fanny's wedding, it cannot deprive me of that delightful moment, when I shall awake and recollect my felicity.

## L E T T E R XLVIII.

TO ELOISA.

AH! my Eloisa! how have I been entertained! What melting sounds! what musick! O delightful source of sensibility and pleasure! Lose not a moment; collect your operas, your cantatas, in a word, all your French musick! then make a very hot fire, and cast the wretched stuff into the flames; be sure you stir it well,  
that

that, cold as it is, it may once at least send forth a little warmth. Make this sacrifice to the God of taste, to expiate our mutual crime, in having profaned your voice with such doleful psalmody, and so long mistaken a noise that stunned our ears for the pathetick language of the heart. How entirely your worthy brother was in the right! and in what unaccountable ignorance have I lived, concerning the productions of that charming art! It gave me but little pleasure, and, therefore, I thought it naturally impotent. Musick, I said, is a vain sound, that only flatters the ear, and makes little or no impression upon the mind. The effect of harmonick sounds is entirely mechanical or physical; and what have these to do with sentiment? Why should I expect to be moved with musical chords more than with a proper agreement of colours? But I never perceived, in the accents of melody applied to those of language, the secret but powerful union between musick and the passions. I had no idea that the same sensations which modulate the voice of an orator, gives the singer a still greater power over our hearts, and that the energetick expression of his own feelings is the sympathetic cause of all our emotion.

This lesson I was taught by his lordship's Italian singer, who, for a musician, talks pretty sensibly of his own art. "Harmony (says he) is nothing more than a remote accessory in imitative musick; for, properly speaking, there is not in harmony the least principle of imitation. Indeed,

deed, it regulates the tones, confirms their propriety, and renders the modulation more distinct; it adds force to the expression, and grace to the air. But from melody alone proceeds that invincible power of pathetick accents over the soul. Let there be performed the most judicious succession of chords, without the addition of melody, and you would be tired in less than a quarter of an hour, whilst, on the contrary, a single voice, without the assistance of harmony, will continue to please a considerable time. An air, be it ever so simple, if there be any thing of the true pathos in the composition, becomes immediately interesting; but, on the contrary, melody without expression will have no effect; and harmony alone can never touch the heart.

“ In this (continued he) consists the error of the French with regard to the power of musick. As they can have no peculiar melody in a language void of musical accent, nor in their uniform and unnatural poetry, they have no idea of any other effect than that of harmony and a loud voice, which, instead of softening the tones, renders them more intolerably noisy: nay, they are even so unfortunate in their pretensions, that they suffer the very harmony they expect to escape them; for, in order to render it more complete, they sacrifice all choice, they no longer distinguish the powers and effects of particular tones, their compositions are overcharged, they have spoilt their ears, and are become insensible to  
every

every thing but noise: so that, in their opinion, the finest voice is that which roars the loudest. Having no original style or taste of their own, they have always followed us heavily, and at a great distance, and since their, or rather our Lulli, who imitated the operas which were then common in Italy, we have beheld them, thirty or forty years behind us, copying, mutilating, and spoiling our ancient compositions, just as other nations do by their fashions. Whenever they boast of their *chansons*, they pronounce their own condemnation; for if they could express the passions, they would not set wit to musick: but because their musick is entirely incapable of any expression, it is better adapted to *chansons* than operas, and our's is more fit for the latter, because it is extremely pathetick."

He then repeated a few Italian scenes without singing, made me sensible of the harmony between the musick and the words in the recitative, between the sentiment and the musick in the airs, and in general the energy which was added to the expression by the exact measure, and the proper choice of chords. In short, after joining to my knowledge of the Italian the most perfect idea in my power of the oratorical and pathetick emphasis, namely, the art of speaking to the ear and to the heart in an inarticulate language, I sat down, and gave my whole attention to this enchanting musick, and, by the emotions I felt, soon perceived that there is a power in the art infinitely beyond what I imagined.



imagined. It is impossible to describe the voluptuous sensation which imperceptibly stole upon me. It was not an unmeaning succession of sounds, as in our musical recitals. Every phrase impressed my brain with some new image, or conveyed a fresh sensation to my heart. The pleasure did not stop at the ear; it penetrated my soul. The performance, without any extraordinary effort, seemed to flow with charming facility; and the performers appeared to be all animated by one soul. The singer, who was quite master of his voice, expressed, with ease, all that the musick and the words required. Upon the whole, I was extremely happy to find myself relieved from those heavy cadences, those terrible efforts of the voice, that continual combat between the air and the measure, which in our musick so seldom agree, and which is not less fatiguing to the audience than the musician.

But when, after a succession of agreeable airs, they struck into those grand pieces of expression, which as they paint, excite the more violent passions, I every moment lost the idea of musick, song, imitation; and imagined I heard the real voice of grief, rage, despair. Sometimes methought I saw a weeping disconsolate mother, a lover betrayed, a furious tyrant, and the sympathy was frequently so powerful that I could hardly keep my seat. I was thus affected, because I now fully conceived the ideas of the composer, and therefore his judicious combination of sounds acted upon me with all its force. No,  
Eloisa,

Eloisa, it is impossible to feel those impressions by halves; they are excessive or not at all; one is either entirely insensible, or raised to an immoderate degree of enthusiasm: either it is an unintelligible noise, or an impetuosity of sensation that hurries you along, and which the soul cannot possibly resist.

Yet I had one cause of regret throughout the whole: it was, that any other than my Eloisa should form sounds that were capable of giving me pleasure, and to hear the most tender expressions of love from the mouth of a wretched eunuch. O, my lovely Eloisa! can there be any kind of sensibility that belongs not to us? Who is there that can feel and express better than we, all that can possibly be expressed or felt by a soul melting into love and tenderness? Where are those who in softer and more pathetick accents could pronounce the *Cor mio*, the *Idolo amato*? Ah! what energy would our hearts add to the expression, if together we should ever sing one of those charming duets which draw such delicious tears from one's eyes! I conjure you to taste this Italian musick as soon as possible, either at home or with your cousin. Lord B—— will order his people to attend when and where you shall think proper. With your exquisite sensibility, and more knowledge than I have of the Italian declamation, one single essay will raise you to a degree of enthusiasm at least equal to mine. Let me also persuade you to take a few lessons of this virtuoso: I have begun with him  
this

this morning. His manner of instruction is simple, clear, and consists more in example than precept. I already perceive that the principal requisite is to feel and mark the *time*, to observe the proper emphasis, and instead of swelling every note, to sustain an equality of tone; in short, to refine the voice from all that French bellowing, that it may become more just, expressive, and flexible. Your's, which is naturally so soft and sweet, will be easily reformed, and your sensibility will soon instruct you in that vivacity and expression, which is the soul of Italian musick.

*E'l cantar che nell' animo si sente.*

The song that's to the soul so sweet.

Leave, then, for ever leave, that tedious and lamentable French sing-song, which bears more resemblance to the cries of the cholick than the transports of the passions; and learn to breathe those divine sounds inspired by sensation, which only are worthy of your voice, worthy of your heart, and which never fail to charm and fire the soul.

---

## LETTER XLIX.

FROM ELOISA.

**Y**OU know, my dear friend, that I write to you by stealth, and in continual apprehension of a surprise. Therefore, as it is impossible for me to write long letters, I must confine myself to those parts of your's which more especially

cially require answering, or to supply what was left unsaid in our conversations, which, alas! are no less clandestine than our interchange of letters: at least, I shall observe this method to-day: your mentioning Lord B—— will make me neglect the rest.

And so you are afraid to lose me, yet you talk to me of singing! surely, this was sufficient cause for a quarrel between two people who were less acquainted. No, no, you are not jealous, it is evident: nor, indeed, will I be so; for I have dived into your heart, and perceive that which another might mistake for indifference, to be absolute confidence. O! what a charming security is that which springs from the sensibility of a perfect union! Hence it is, I know, that from your own heart you derive your good opinion of mine; and hence it is you are so entirely justified, that I should doubt your affection, if you were more alarmed.

I neither know nor care whether Lord B—— has any other regard for me than all men have for girls of my age. But of what consequence are his sentiments of the matter? Mine and my father's are the only proper subjects of enquiry; and these are both the same as they were with regard to the two pretended pretenders, of whom you say you will say nothing. If his exclusion and their's will add to your repose, rest satisfied. How much soever we might think ourselves honoured in the addresses of a man of his lordship's rank, never, with her own or her father's consent,

sent, would Eloisa Etange become Lady B——. Of this you may be very certain: not that you are hence to conclude that he was ever thought of in that light. I am positive you are the first person who supposed that he has the least inclination for me. But, be that as it will, I know my father's sentiments as well as if he had already declared them. Surely, this is sufficient to calm your fears; at least it is as much as it concerns you to know. The rest is matter of mere curiosity, and you know I have resolved that it shall not be satisfied. You may reproach me as you please with reserve, and pretend that our concerns and our interest are the same: if I had always been reserved, it would now have been less important. Had it not been for my indiscretion, in repeating to you some of my father's words, you would never have retired to Meillerie, you would never have written the letter which was the cause of my ruin: I should still have possessed my innocence, and might yet have aspired to happiness. Judge, then, by my sufferings for one indiscretion, how I ought to dread the commission of another! You are too violent to have any prudence. You could with less difficulty conquer your passions than disguise them. The least suspicion would set you raving, and the most trivial circumstances would confirm all your suspicions. Our secrets would be legible in your face, and your impetuous zeal would frustrate all my hopes. Leave, therefore, to me the cares of love, and do you preserve its pleasures only.

You

You, surely, have no reason to complain of this division: acquiesce, and be convinced that all you can possibly contribute to the advancement of our felicity, is, not to interrupt it.

But, alas! what avail my precautions now? Is it for me to be cautious how I step, who am already fallen headlong down the precipice, or to prevent the evils with which I am already oppressed? Ah! wretched girl! is it for thee to talk of felicity? Was ever happiness compatible with shame and remorse? Cruel, cruel fate! neither to be able to bear nor to repent of my crime; to be beset by a thousand terrors, deluded by a thousand hopes, and not even to enjoy the horrible tranquillity of despair. The question is not now of virtue and resolution, but of fortitude and prudence. My present business is not to extinguish a flame which ought never to expire, but to render it innocent, or to die guilty. Consider my situation, my friend, and then see whether you dare depend upon my zeal.

---

## L E T T E R L.

FROM ELOISA.

I Refused to explain to you, before we parted yesterday, the cause of that uneasiness you remarked in me, because you were not in a condition to bear reproof. In spite, however, of my aversion to explanations, I think I ought to do it now, to acquit myself of the promise I then made you.

I know

I know not whether you may remember your last night's unaccountable discourse and behaviour; for my part, I shall remember them too long for your honour or my repose; indeed, they have hurt me too much to be easily forgotten. Similar expressions have sometimes reached my ears from the street; but I never thought they could come from the lips of any worthy man. Of this, however, I am certain, there are no such in the lover's dictionary, and nothing was farther from my thoughts than that they should ever pass between you and me. Good heaven! what kind of love must your's be, thus to season its delights! It is true, you were flushed with wine, and I perceive how much one must overlook in a country where such excess is permitted. It is for this reason I speak to you on the subject; for you may be assured that, had you treated me in the same manner when perfectly sober, it should have been the last opportunity you should ever have had.

But what alarms me most on your account is, that the conduct of men in liquor is often no other than the image of what passes in their hearts at other times. Shall I believe that, in a condition which disguises nothing, you discovered yourself to be what you really are? What will become of me if you think this morning as you did last night? Sooner than be liable to such insults, I had rather extinguish so gross a passion, and lose for ever a lover who,

so ignorant how to respect his mistress, deserves so little of her esteem.

Is it possible, that you who delight in virtuous sentiments should have fallen into that cruel error, and have adopted the notion, that a lover once made happy need no longer pay any regard to decorum, and that those have no title to respect whose cruelty is no longer to be feared. Alas! had you always thought thus, your power would have been less dreadful, and I should have been less unhappy. But mistake not, my friend; nothing is so pernicious to true lovers as the prejudices of the world; so many talk of love, and so few know what it is, that most people mistake its pure and gentle laws for the vile maxims of an abject commerce, which, soon satiated, has recourse to the monsters of imagination, and, in order to support itself, sinks into depravity.

Possibly, I may be mistaken; but it seems to me that true love is the chastest of all human connexions; and that its sacred flame should purify our natural inclinations, by concentrating them in one object. It is love that secures us from temptation, and makes the whole sex indifferent, except the beloved individual.

To a woman indifferent to love, every man is the same, and all are men; but to her whose heart is truly susceptible of that refined passion, there is no other man in the world but her lover. What do I say? Is a lover no more than a man? He is a being far superiour! There exists not



a man in the creation with her who truly loves : her lover is more, and all others are less ; they live for each other, and are the only beings of their species. They have no desires ; they love. The heart is not led by, but leads the senses, and throws over their errors the veil of delight. There is nothing obscene but in lewdness and its gross language. Real love, always modest, seizes not impudently its favours, but steals them with timidity. Secrecy, silence, and a timorous bashfulness heighten and conceal its delicious transports ; its flame purifies all its caresses, while decency and chastity attend even its most sensual pleasures. It is love alone that knows how to gratify the desires without trespassing on modesty. Tell me, you who once knew what true pleasures were, how can a cynick impudence be consistent with their enjoyment ? Will it not deprive that enjoyment of all its sweetness ? Will it not deface that image of perfection which represents the beloved object ? Believe me, my friend, lewdness and love can never dwell together—they are incompatible. On the heart depends the true happiness of those who love ; and where love is absent, nothing can supply its place.

But, supposing you were so unhappy as to be pleased with such immodest discourse, how could you prevail on yourself to make use of it so indiscreetly, and address her who was so dear to you, in a manner of which a virtuous man ought certainly to be ignorant ? Since

when is it become delightful to afflict the object one loves? and how barbarous is that pleasure which delights in tormenting others? I have not forgotten that I have forfeited the right I had to be respected: but if ever I should forget it, is it you that ought to remind me of it? Does it belong to the authour of my crime to aggravate my punishment? Ought he not rather to administer comfort? All the world may have reason to despise me, but you have none. It is to you I owe the mortifying situation to which I am reduced; and surely the tears I have shed for my weakness call upon you to alleviate my sorrow. I am neither nice nor prudish. Alas! I am but too far from it; I have not been even discrete. You know too well, ungrateful as you are, that my susceptible heart can refuse nothing to love. But, whatever I may yield to love, I will make no concessions to any thing less; and you have instructed me too well in its language to be able to substitute one so different in its room. No terms of abuse, nor even blows, could have insulted me more than such demonstrations of kindness. Either renounce Eloisa, or continue to merit her esteem. I have already told you I know no love without modesty; and, how much soever it may cost me to give up your's, it will cost me still more to keep it at so dear a price.

I have yet much to say on this subject; but I must here close my letter, and defer it to another opportunity. In the mean time, pray

observe one effect of your mistaken maxims regarding the immoderate use of wine. I am very sensible your heart is not to blame; but you have deeply wounded mine; and, without knowing what you did, afflicted a mind too easily alarmed, and to which nothing is indifferent that comes from you.

---

### LETTER LI.

TO ELOISA.

**T**HERE is not a line in your letter that does not chill the blood in my veins; and I can hardly be persuaded, after twenty times reading, that it is addressed to me. Who, I? Can I have offended Eloisa? Can I have profaned her beauties? Can the idol of my soul, to whom every moment of my life I offer up my adorations—can she have been the object of my insults? No, I would have pierced this heart a thousand times, before it should have formed so barbarous a design. Alas! you know but little of this heart, that flies to prostrate itself at your feet—a heart anxious to contrive for thee a new species of homage, unknown to human beings. Ah! my Eloisa, you know that heart but little, if you accuse it of wanting towards you the ordinary respect which even a common lover entertains for his mistress.—Is it possible I can have been impudent and brutal? I, who detest the language of immodesty, and never in my life entered into places where it is held! But that

I

I should

I should repeat such discourse to you; that I should aggravate your just indignation! Had I been the most abandoned of men, had I spent my youth in riot and debauchery, had even a taste for sensual and shameful pleasures found a place in the heart where you reside, tell me, Eloisa, my angel, tell me, how was it possible I could have betrayed before you that impudence, which no one can have but in the presence of those who are themselves abandoned enough to approve it. Ah, no! it is impossible. One look of your's had sealed my lips, and corrected my heart. Love would have veiled my impetuous desires beneath the charms of your modesty; while in the sweet union of our souls their own delirium only would have led the senses astray. I appeal to your own testimony, if ever, in the utmost extravagance of an unbounded passion, I ceased to revere its charming object. If I received the reward of my love, did I ever take an advantage of my happiness, to do violence to your bashfulness? If the trembling hand of an ardent but timid lover hath sometimes presumed too far, did he ever with brutal temerity profane your charms? If ever an indiscrete transport drew aside their veil, though but for a moment, was not that of modesty as soon substituted in its place? Unalterable as the chastity of your mind, the flame that glows in mine can never change. Is not the affecting and tender union of our souls sufficient to constitute our happiness? Does not in this alone

consist all the happiness of our lives? Have we a wish to know or taste of any other? And canst thou conceive this enchantment can be broken? How was it possible for me to forget in a moment all regard to chastity, to our love, my honour, and that invincible reverence and respect which you must always inspire, even in those by whom you are not adored? No; I cannot believe it. It was not I that offended you. I have not the least remembrance of it; and, were I but one instant culpable, can it be that my remorse should ever leave me? No, Eloisa, some demon, envious of happiness too great for a mortal, has taken upon him my form, to destroy my felicity.

Nevertheless, I abjure, I detest a crime which I must have committed, since you are my accuser, but in which my will had no part. How do I begin to abhor that fatal intemperance, which once seemed to me favourable to the effusions of the heart, and which has so cruelly deceived mine! I have bound myself, therefore, by a solemn and irrevocable vow, to renounce wine from this day as a mortal poison. Never shall that fatal liquor again touch my lips, bereave me of my senses, or involve me in guilt to which my heart is a stranger. If I ever break this solemn vow, may the powers of love inflict on me the punishment I deserve! May the image of Eloisa that instant forsake my heart, and abandon it for ever to indifference and despair.

But,

But, think not I mean to expiate my crime by so slight a mortification. This is a precaution, and not a punishment. It is from you I expect that which I deserve; nay, I beg it of you, to console my affliction. Let offended love avenge itself, and be appeased: punish without hating me, and I will suffer without murmuring. Be just and severe; it is necessary, and I must submit; but if you would not deprive me of life, you must not deprive me of your heart.

---

## L E T T E R LII.

FROM ELOISA.

**W**HAT! my friend renounce his bottle for his mistress! This is, indeed, a sacrifice! I defy any one to find me a man in the four cantons more deeply in love than yourself. Not but there may be found some young frenchified petit-maitres among us that drink water through affectation; but you are the first Swiss that ever love made a water-drinker, and ought to stand as an example for ever in the lover's chronicle of your country, I have even been informed of your abstinent behaviour, and have been much edified to hear that, being to sup last night with M. de Vueillerans, you saw six bottles go round after supper, without touching a drop; and that you spared your water as little as your companions did their wine. This state of self-denial and penitence, however,

must have lasted already three days, and in three days you must have abstained from wine at least for six meals. Now, to the abstinence for six meals, observed through fidelity, may be added six others through fear, six through shame, six through habit, and six more through obstinacy. How many motives might be found to prolong this mortifying abstinence, of which love alone will have all the credit? But can love condescend to pride itself in a merit to which it hath no just pretensions?

This idle raillery may possibly be as disagreeable to you, as your talk the other night was to me: it is time, therefore, to stop its career. You are naturally of a serious turn, and I have perceived ere now that a tedious scene of trifling hath heated you as much as a long walk usually does a fat man; but I take nearly the same vengeance of you as Henry the Fourth took of the Duke of Maine: your sovereign also will imitate the clemency of that best of kings. In like manner, I am afraid lest, by virtue of your contrition and excuses, you should in the end make a merit of a fault so fully repaired; I will, therefore, forget it immediately, lest, by deferring my forgiveness too long, it should become rather an act of ingratitude than generosity.

With regard to your resolution of renouncing your bottle for ever, it has not so much weight with me as perhaps you may imagine; strong passions think nothing of these trifling sacrifices.

and

and love will not be satisfied with gallantry. There is besides more of address sometimes than resolution, in making for the present moment an advantage of an uncertain futurity, and in reaping beforehand the credit of an eternal abstinence, which may be renounced at pleasure. But, my good friend, is the abuse of every thing that is agreeable to the senses inseparable from the enjoyment of it? Is drunkenness necessarily attached to the taste of wine? and is philosophy so cruel, or so useless, as to offer no other expedient to prevent the immoderate use of agreeable things, than that of giving them up entirely?

If you keep true to your engagement, you deprive yourself of an innocent pleasure, and endanger your health in changing your manner of living: on the other hand, if you break it, you commit a double offense against love; and even your honour will stand impeached. I will make use, therefore, on this occasion of my privilege; and do not only release you from the observance of a vow, which is null and void, as being made without my consent; but do absolutely forbid you to observe it beyond the term I am going to prescribe. On Thursday next my Lord B—— is to give us a concert. At the collation I will send you a cup, about half full of a pure and wholesome nectar; which it is my will and pleasure that you drink off in my presence, after having made, in a few drops, an expiatory libation to the Graces. My peni-



tent is permitted afterwards to return to the sober use of wine, tempered with the chryſtal of the fountain; or as your honeſt Plutarch has it, moderating the ardours of Bacchus, by a communication with the nymphs.

But to our concert on Tueſday: that blunderer Regianino has got it into his head that I am already able to ſing an Italian air, and even a duo with him. He is deſirous that I ſhould try it with you, in order to ſhow off his two ſcholars together; but there are certain tender paſſages in it dangerous to ſing before a mother, when the heart is of the party: it would be better, therefore, to defer this tryal of our ſkill to the firſt concert we have at our couſin's. I attribute the facility with which I have acquired a taſte for the Italian muſic to that which my brother gave me for their poetry: and for which I have been ſo well prepared by you, that I perceive eaſily the cadence of the verſe: and, if I may believe Regianino, have already a tolerable notion of the true *accent*. I now begin every leſſon by reading ſome paſſages of Taſſo, or ſome ſcene of Metaſtatio; after this, he makes me repeat and accompany the recitative, ſo that I ſeem to continue reading or ſpeaking all the while; which I am pretty certain could never be the caſe in the French muſick. After this I praſtiſe, in regular time, the expreſſion of true and equal tones; an exerciſe which the noiſe I had been accuſtomed to rendered difficult enough. At length we paſs on to the air, wherein

wherein he demonstrates that the justness and flexibility of the voice, the pathetick expression, the force and beauty of every part, are naturally affected by the sweetness of the melody and precision of the measure; insomuch that what appeared at first the most difficult to learn need hardly be taught me. The nature of the musick is so well adapted to the sound of the language, and of so refined a modulation, that one need only hear the bass, and know how to speak, to decypher the melody. In the Italian musick all the passions have distinct and strong expressions: directly contrary to the drawling, disagreeable tones of the French, it is always sweet and easy, and at the same time lively and affecting; its smallest efforts produce the greatest effects. In short, I find that this musick elevates the soul, without tearing the lungs, which is just the musick I want. On Tuesday then, my dear friend, my preceptor, my penitent, my apostle, alas! what are you not to me? Ah, why should there be only one title wanting!

P. S.—Do you know there is some talk of such another agreeable party on the water, as we made two years ago, in company with poor Challiot? How modest was then my subtle preceptor! How he trembled when he handed me out of the boat! Ah, the hypocrite! How greatly changed is he!

## L E T T E R LIII.

FROM ELOISA.

**T**HUS every thing conspires to disconcert our schemes, every thing disappoints our hopes, every thing betrays a passion which heaven ought to sanctify! And are we always to be the sport of fortune, the unhappy victims of delusive expectation! Shall we still pant in pursuit of pleasure, without ever attaining it? Those nuptials, which were so impatiently expected, were first to have been celebrated at Clarens; but the bad weather opposed it, and the ceremony was performed in town: however, we had still some hours of a private interview; but we were so closely beset by officious importunity, that it was impossible for us both to escape at the same instant. At last a favourable opportunity offers, but we are again disappointed by the cruellest of mothers, and that which ought to have been the moment of our felicity went near to have proved our destruction. Nevertheless, I am so far from being dismayed by these numberless obstacles, that they serve but to inflame my resolution. I know not by what new powers I am animated, but I feel an intrepidity of soul to which I have been hitherto ignorant; and if you are inspired with the same spirit, this evening, this very evening, I will perform my promises, and discharge at once all the obligations of love.

Weigh

Weigh this affair maturely, and consider well at what rate you estimate your life; for the expedient I am going to propose may probably lead us to the grave. If thou art afraid, read no farther; but if thy heart shrinks no more at the point of a sword than formerly at the precipice of Meillerie, mine shares the danger, and hesitates no longer. Be attentive!

Bab, who generally lies in my chamber, has been ill these three days, and though I offered to attend her, she is removed in spite of me: but as she is now somewhat better, possibly tomorrow she may return. The stairs which lead to my mother's apartment and mine are at some distance from the room where they sup, and, at that hour, the rest of the house, except the kitchen, is entirely uninhabited. The darkness of the night will then favour your progress through the streets without the least risk of being observed, and you are not unacquainted with the house.

I believe I have said enough to be understood. Come this afternoon to Fanny's; I will there explain the rest, and give the necessary instructions: but if that should be impossible, you will find them in writing, in the old place, to which I consign this letter. The subject is too important to be trusted with any person living.

O! I see the violent palpitation of your heart! How I feel your transports! No, no, my charming friend, we will not quit this short existence without having tasted happiness. Yet, remember

ber that the fatal moment is environed with the horrors of death! That the way to bliss is extremely hazardous, its duration full of perils, and your retreat beyond measure dangerous; that if we are discovered, we are inevitably lost, and that to prevent it fortune must be uncommonly indulgent. Let us not deceive ourselves: I know my father too well to doubt that he would not instantly pierce your heart, or that even I should not be the first victim to his revenge; for certainly he would show me no mercy, nor indeed can you imagine that I would lead you into dangers to which I myself were not exposed.

Remember, also, that you are not to have the least dependence on your courage; it will not bear a thought: I even charge you very expressly to come entirely unarmed; so that your intrepidity will avail you nothing. If we are surprised, I am resolved to throw myself into your arms, to grasp you to my heart, and thus to receive the mortal blow, that they may part us no more! so shall my exit be the happiest moment of my life.

Yet I hope a milder fate awaits us: we surely deserve it; and fortune must at last grow weary of her injustice. Come, then, thou joy of my heart, life of my life, come and be reunited to thyself. Come, under the auspices of love, and receive the reward of thy obedience and thy sacrifices. O come and confess, even in the bosom

som of pleasure, that from the union of hearts proceed its greatest delights.

---

## L E T T E R L I V .

T O E L O I S A .

**A**M I then arrived!—how my heart flutters in entering this asylum of love! Yes, Eloisa, I am now in your closet: I am in the sanctuary of my soul's adored. The torch of love lighted my steps, and I passed through the house unperceived—Delightful mansion! happy place! once the scene of tenderness and infant love suppressed! These conscious walls have seen my growing, my successful passion, and will now a second time behold it crowned with bliss: witness of my eternal constancy, be witness also of my happiness, and conceal for ever the transports of the most faithful and most fortunate of men.

How charming is this place of concealment! Every thing around me serves to inflame the ardour of my passion. O Eloisa, this delightful spot is full of thee, and my desires are kindled by every footstep of thine. Every sense is at once intoxicated with imaginary bliss. An almost imperceptible sweetness, more exquisite than the scent of the rose, and more volatile than that of the Iris, exhales from every part. I fancy I hear the delightful sound of your voice. Every part of your scattered dress presents to my  
glowing

glowing imagination the charms it has concealed. That light head-dress, which is adorned by those bright locks it affects to hide; that simple elegant *dehabille*, which displays so well the taste of the wearer; those pretty slippers, that sit so easily on your little feet; those stays, which encircle and embrace your slender—Heavens, what a charming shape! how the top of the stomacher is waved in two gentle curves—luxurious sight! the whalebone has yielded to their impression!—delicious impression! let me devour it with kisses!—O Gods! how shall I be able to bear?—Ah! methinks I feel already a tender heart beat softly under my happy hand! Eloisa, my charming Eloisa, I see, I feel the at every pore. We now breathe the same air. How thy delay inflames and torments me! My impatience is insupportable. O, come, fly, Eloisa, fly to my arms, or I am undone! How fortunate it was to find pen, ink, and paper! By expressing what I feel, I moderate my ecstasy, and give a turn to my transports, by attempting to describe them.

Ha! I hear a noise—Should it be her inhuman father!—I do not think myself a coward—but death would terrify me just now. My despair would be equal to the ardour which consumes me. Grant me, good heaven, but one more hour to live, and I resign the remainder of my life to thy utmost rigour. What impatience! what fears! what cruel palpitation! Ah! the door opens! It is she! it is Eloisa! I

see

see her enter the chamber and lock the door. My heart, my feeble heart, sinks under its agitations. Let me recover myself, and gather strength to support the bliss that overwhelms me.

---

L E T T E R L V.

TO ELQISA.

**O**H! let us die, my sweet friend! let us die, thou best beloved of my heart! How shall we hereafter support an insipid life, whose pleasures we have already exhausted? Tell me, if thou canst, what I experienced last night: give me an idea of a whole life spent in the same manner, or let me quit an existence which has nothing left that can equal the pleasures I have enjoyed.

I had tasted bliss, and formed a conception of happiness. But, alas! I had only dreamt of true pleasure, and conceived only the happiness of a child! My senses deceived my unrefined heart; I sought supreme delight in their gratification; and I find that the end of sensual pleasures is but the beginning of mine. O, thou choice master-piece of nature's works; divine Eloisa! to the ecstatic possession of whom all the transports of the most ardent passion hardly suffice! Yet it is not those transports I regret the most. Ah! no: deny me, if it must be so, those intoxicating favours, for the enjoyment of which, nevertheless, I would die a thousand deaths, but restore me all the bliss which does not depend on them.



them, and it will abundantly exceed them. Restore me that intimate connexion of souls, which you first taught me to know, and have so well instructed me to taste. Restore to me that delightful languor, accomplished by the mutual effusions of the heart. Restore to me that enchanting slumber that lulled me in your breast! Restore to me the yet more delicious moments when I awoke; those interrupted sighs, those melting tears, those kisses slowly, sweetly impressed in voluptuous languishment; let me hear those soft, those tender complaints, amidst whose gentle murmurs you pressed so close those hearts which were made for each other.

Tell me, Eloisa, you, who ought from your own sensibility to judge so well of mine, do you think I ever tasted real love before? My feelings are greatly changed since yesterday; they seem to have taken a less impetuous turn; but more agreeable, more tender, and more delightful. Do you remember that whole hour we spent, in calmly taking over the circumstances of our love, and of the fearful consequences of what might happen hereafter, by which the present moment was made the more interesting? That short hour in which a slight apprehension of future sorrow rendered our conversation the more affecting. I was tranquil, and yet was near my Eloisa. I adored her, but my desires were calm. I did not even think of any other felicity than to perceive your face close to mine, to feel your breath on my cheek, and your arm  
about

about my neck. What a pleasing tranquillity prevailed over all my senses ! How refined, how lasting, how constant the delight ! The mind possessed all the pleasure of enjoyment, not momentary, but durable. What a difference is there between the impetuous sallies of appetite, and a situation so calm and delightful ! It is the first time I have experienced it in your presence ; and judge of the extraordinary change it has effected. That hour I shall ever think the happiest of my life, as it is the only one which I could wish should have been prolonged to eternity. Tell me, then, Eloisa, did I not love you before, or have I ceased to love you since ?

If I cease to love you ! What a doubt is that ! Do I cease to exist, or does not my life depend more on the heart of Eloisa than my own ! I feel, I feel you are a thousand times more dear to me than ever ; and I find myself enabled, from the slumber of my desires, to love you more tenderly than before. My sentiments, it is true, are less passionate, but they are more affectionate, and are of a different kind : without losing any thing of their force, they are multiplied ; the mildness of friendship moderates the extravagance of love ; and I can hardly conceive any kind of attachment which does not unite me to you. O, my charming mistress ! my wife ! my sister ! my friend ! By what name shall I express what I feel, after having exhausted all those which are dear to the heart of man ?

Let

Let me now confess a suspicion which, to my shame and mortification, I have entertained; it is that you are more capable of love than myself. Yes, my Eloisa, it is on you that my life, my being depends: I revere you with all the faculties of my soul; but your's contains more of love. I see, I feel, that love hath penetrated deeper into your heart than mine. It is that which animates your charms, which prevails in your discourse, which gives to your eyes that penetrating sweetness, to your voice such moving accents: it is that which your presence alone imperceptibly communicates to the hearts of others, the tender emotions of your own. Alas! how far am I from such an independent state of love!—I seek the enjoyment, and you the love, of the beloved object:—I am transported, and you enamoured: not all my transports are equal to your languishing softness; and it is in such sensations as your's only, that supreme felicity consists. It is but since yesterday that I have known such refined pleasure. You have left me something of that inconceivable charm peculiar to yourself; and I am persuaded that your sweet breath hath inspired me with a new soul. Haste, then, I conjure you, to complete the work you have begun. Take from me all that remains of mine, and give me a soul entirely your's. No, angelick beauty, celestial maid, no sentiments but such as your's can do honour to your charms. You alone are worthy to inspire a perfect passion; you alone are ca-  
pable

pable of feeling it. Ah! give me *your* heart, my Eloisa, that I may love you as you deserve.

---

## L E T T E R LVI.

FROM CLARA TO ELOISA.

**I** Have a piece of information for my dear cousin, in which she will find herself a little interested. Last night there happened an affair between your friend and Lord B—— which may possibly become serious. Thus it was, as I had it from Mr. Orbe, who was present, and who gave me the following account this morning:—

Having supped with his lordship, and entertained themselves for a couple of hours with their musick, they sat down to chat and drink punch. Your friend drank only one single glass mixed with water, The other two were not quite so sober; for though Mr. Orbe declares he was not touched, I intend to give him my opinion of that matter some other time. You naturally became the subject of their conversation; for you know this Englishman can talk of nobody else. Your friend, who did not much relish his lordship's discourse, seemed so little obliged to him for his confidence, that at last my lord, flushed with liquor, and piqued at the coldness of his manner, dared to tell him, in complaining of your indifference, that it was not so general as might be imagined, and that those who were silent had less reason to complain. You  
know

know your friend's impetuosity: he instantly took fire, repeated the words with great warmth and insult, which drew upon him the *lie*, and they both flew to their swords. Lord B——, who was half seas over, in running gave his ancle a sudden twist which obliged him to stagger to a chair. His leg began immediately to swell, and this more effectually appeased their wrath than all Mr. Orbe's interposition. But as he continued attentive to what passed, he observed your friend, in going out, approach his lordship, and heard him whisper: "*As soon as you are able to walk, you will let me know it, or I shall take care to inform myself.*"—"You need not give yourself that trouble (said the other, with a contemptuous smile) *you shall know it time enough.*"—"We shall see," returned your friend, and left the room. Mr. Orbe, when he delivers this letter, will tell you more particularly. It is your prudence that must suggest the means of stifling this unlucky affair. In the mean time, the bearer waits your commands, and you may depend on his secrecy.

Pardon me, my dear, my friendship forces me to speak: I am terribly apprehensive on your account. Your attachment can never continue long concealed in this small town; it is indeed a miraculous piece of good fortune, considering it is now two years since it began, that you are not already the publick talk of the place. But it will very soon happen, if you are not extremely cautious. I am convinced your character would long since have suffered, if you had been less generally

merally beloved; but the people are so universally prejudiced in your favour, that no one dares to speak ill of you, for fear of being discredited and despised. Nevertheless, every thing must have an end; and much I fear that your mystery draws near its period. I have great reason to apprehend that Lord B——'s suspicions proceed from some disagreeable tales he has heard. Let me intreat you to think seriously of this affair. The watchman has been heard to say, that, some time ago, he saw your friend come out of your house at five o'clock in the morning. Fortunately he himself had early intelligence of this report; and found means to silence the fellow; but what signifies such silence? It will serve only to confirm the reports that will be privately whispered to all the world. Besides, your mother's suspicions are daily increasing. You remember her frequent hints. She has several times spoke to me in such serious terms, that if she did not dread the violence of your father's temper, I am certain she would already have opened her mind to him; but she is conscious that the blame would fall chiefly on herself.

It is impossible I should repeat it too often; think of your safety before it be too late. Prevent those growing suspicions which nothing but his absence can dispel: and, indeed, to be sincere with you, under what pretext can he be supposed to continue here? Possibly, in a few weeks more, his removal may be to no purpose. If the least circumstance should reach your father's ear you, will

will have cause to tremble at the indignation of an old officer, so tenacious of the honour of his family, and at the petulance of a violent youth. But we must first endeavour to terminate the affair with Lord B—, for it were in vain to attempt to persuade your friend to decamp, till that is in some shape accomplished.

---

## L E T T E R LVII.

FROM ELOISA.

**I** Have been informed, my friend, of what has passed between you and my Lord B—; and from a perfect knowledge of the fact, I have a mind to discuss the affair, and give you my opinion of the conduct you ought to observe on this occasion, agreeably to the sentiments you profess, and of which I suppose you do not make only an idle parade.

I do not concern myself whether you are skilled in fencing, nor whether you think yourself capable of contending with a man who is famous all over Europe for his superior dexterity in that art, having fought five or six times in his life, and always killed, wounded, or disarmed his man. I know that in such a case as your's, people consult not their skill, but their courage; and that the fashionable method to be revenged of a man who has insulted you, is to let him run you through the body. But, let us pass over this *wise* maxim; you will tell me that your honour

honour and mine are dearer to you than life. This, therefore, is the principle on which we must reason.

To begin with what immediately concerns yourself. Can you ever make it appear in what respect you were personally offended by a conversation that related solely to me? We shall see presently whether you ought, on such an occasion, to take my cause upon yourself: in the mean time, you cannot but allow that the quarrel was quite foreign to your own honour in particular, unless you are to take the suspicion of being beloved by me as an affront. I must own you have been insulted; but then it was after having begun the quarrel yourself by an atrocious affront; and, as I have had frequent opportunities, from the many military people in our family, of hearing these horrible questions debated, I am not to learn that one outrage committed in return to another does not annul the first, and that he who receives the first insult is the only person offended. It is the same in this case, as in a rencounter, where the aggressor is only in fault: he who wounds or kills another in his own defense, is not considered as being guilty of murder.

To come now to myself; we will agree that I was insulted by the conversation of my Lord B——, although he said no more of me than he might justify. But do you know what you are about in defending my cause with so much warmth and indiscretion? You aggravate his in-



sults; you prove that he was in the right; you sacrifice my honour to the false punctilios of your's, and defame your mistress, to gain at most the reputation of a good swords-man. Pray, tell me what affinity there is between your manner of justifying me and my real justification? Do you think that to engage in my behalf with so much heat is any great proof that there are no connexions between us? And that it is sufficient to show your courage, to convince the world you are not my lover? Be assured, my Lord B—'s insinuations are less injurious to me than your conduct. It is you alone who take upon yourself, by this bustle, to publish and confirm them. He may, perhaps, turn aside the point of your sword in the conflict; but neither my reputation, nor perhaps my life, can be secured against the fatal blow which your rash duel will give them.

These reasons are too solid to admit of a reply; but I foresee you will oppose custom to reason; you will tell me there is a fatality in some things, which hurries us away in spite of ourselves: that a man is in no case whatever to suffer the lie to be given him; and that, when an affair is gone to a certain length, it is impossible to avoid fighting or infamy. We will examine into the validity of this argument.

Do not you remember a distinction you once made, on a very important occasion, between real and apparent honour? Under which of these classes shall we rank that in question? For my part, I cannot see that it will even admit of a doubt

doubt. What comparison is there between the glory of cutting another's throat, and the testimony of a good conscience? and of what importance is the idle opinion of the world, set in competition with true honour, whose foundation is rooted in the heart? Can we be deprived of virtues we really possess by false aspersions of calumny? Does the insult of a drunken man prove such insults deserved? Or does the honour of the virtuous and prudent lie at the mercy of the first brute or blockhead he meets? Will you tell me that fighting a duel shows a man to have courage, and that this is sufficient to efface the dishonour, and prevent the reproach due to all other vices? I would ask you, what kind of honour can dictate such a decision? Or what arguments justify it? On such principles a scoundrel need only to fight, to become a man of probity: the assertions of a liar become true when they are maintained at the point of the sword; and, if you were even accused of killing a man, you have only to kill a second, to prove the accusation false. Thus virtue, vice, honour, infamy, truth, and falsehood, all derive their existence from the event of a duel: a fencing-school is the only court of justice; there is no other law than violence, no other argument than murder: all the reparation due to the insulted, is to kill them; and every offense is equally washed away by the blood of the offender or the offended. If wolves themselves could reason, would they entertain maxims more inhuman than these? Judge your-

self, from the situation you are in, whether I exaggerate their absurdity. What is it you resent? That the lie has been given you on an occasion wherein you actually asserted a falsehood. Do you intend to destroy the truth, by killing him you would punish for having told it? Do you consider that, in risking the success of a duel, you call heaven to witness the truth of a lie, and impiously bid the Supreme Disposer of events support the cause of injustice, and give the triumph to falsehood? Does not such absurdity shock you? Does not such impiety make you shudder? Good God! what a wretched sense of honour is that, which is less afraid of vice than reproach; and will not permit that another should give us the lie, which our own hearts had given us before?

Do you, who would have every one profit by their reading, make use of your's: see if you can find one instance of a challenge being given, when the world abounded with heroes? Did the most valiant men of antiquity ever think of revenging private injuries by personal combat? Did Cæsar send a challenge to Cato, or Pompey to Cæsar, in consequence of their many reciprocal affronts? or was the greatest warrior of Greece disgraced, because he put up with the threats of being cudgelled? Manners, I know, change with the times; but are they all equally commendable? Or is it unreasonable to enquire whether those of any times are agreeable to the dictates of true honour? This is not of a fickle

or

or changeable nature: true honour does not depend on time, place, or prejudice; it can neither be annihilated, nor generated anew; but has its constant source in the heart of the virtuous man, and in the unalterable rules of his conduct. If the most enlightened, the most brave, the most virtuous people upon earth had no duels, I will venture to declare it not an institution of honour, but a horrid and savage custom, worthy its barbarous origin. It remains for you to determine whether, when his own life, or that of another, is in question, a man of real honour is to be governed by the mode, or if it be not a greater instance of true courage to resist the absurd tyranny of custom, than tamely to submit to it. What would be your opinion of a man who should regulate his conduct by the mode, in places where different customs are established. At Messina or Naples he would not challenge his man, but wait for him at the corner of a street, and stab him in the back. This is called bravery in those countries, where honour consists in killing your enemy, and not in being killed by him yourself. Beware, then, of confounding the sacred name of honour with that barbarous prejudice, which subjects every virtue to the decision of the sword, and is only adapted to make men daring villains! Will it be said this custom may be made use of as a supplement to the rules of probity? Wherever probity prevails is not such a supplement useless? And what shall be said to the man who exposes his life in order to be exempted from being vir-

tuous? Do you not see that the crimes, which shame and a sense of honour have not prevented, are screened and multiplied by a false shame, and the fear of reproach? It is this fear which makes men hypocrites and liars: it is this which makes them embrue their hands in the blood of their friends, for an idle word, which ought to be forgotten, or for a merited reproach, which they ought patiently to suffer. It is this which transforms the abused and fearful maid into an infernal fury: it is this which arms the hand of the mother against the tender fruit of—I shudder at the horrible idea, and give thanks at least to that Being who searcheth the heart, that he hath banished far from mine a sense of that diabolical honour, which inspires nothing but wickedness, and makes humanity tremble.

Look into yourself, therefore, and consider whether it be permitted you to make a deliberate attempt on the life of a man, and expose your's to satisfy a barbarous and fatal notion, which has no foundation in reason or nature. Consider whether the sad reflexion of the blood spilt on such occasions can cease to cry out for vengeance on him who has spilt it. Do you know any crime equal to wilful murder? If humanity also be the basis of every virtue, what must be thought of the man whose blood-thirsty and depraved disposition prompts him to seek the life of his fellow-creature? Do you remember what you have yourself said to me, against entering into foreign service? Have you forgot that a good citizen

citizen owes his life to his country, and has not a right to dispose of it, without the permission of its laws, and much less in direct opposition to them? O, my friend, if you have a sincere regard for virtue, learn to pursue it in its own way, and not in the ways of the world. I will own some slight inconvenience may arise from it, but is the word virtue no more to you than an empty sound? and will you practise it only when it costs you no trouble? I will ask, however, in what will such inconvenience consist? In the whispers of a set of idle or wicked people, who seek only to amuse themselves with the misfortunes of others, and have always some new tale to propagate. A pretty motive truly, to engage men to cut each other's throats! If the philosopher and man of sense regulate their behaviour, on the most important occasions of life, by the idle talk of the multitude, to what purpose is all their parade of study, when they are at last no better than the vulgar? Dare you not sacrifice your resentment to duty, to esteem, to friendship, for fear it should be said you are afraid of death? Weigh well these circumstances, my good friend, and I am convinced you will find more cowardice in the fear of that reproach than in the fear of death. The braggard, the coward, would, at all hazards, pass for brave men,

*Ma verace valor, ben che negletto,  
E' di se stesso à se freggio assai chiaro*

But real valour, howsoe'er neglected,  
Is still the same, and from affronts respected.

He who affects to meet death without fear is a liar. All men fear to die; it is a law with all sensible beings, without which every species of mortals would soon be destroyed. This fear is the simple emotion of nature, and that not in itself indifferent, but just, and conformable to the order of things. All that renders it shameful, or blameable, is, that it may sometimes prevent us from doing good, and the proper discharge of our duty. If cowardice were no obstacle to virtue it would cease to be a vice. Whoever is more attached to life than to his duty, I own, cannot be truly virtuous; but can you, who pique yourself on acting rationally, explain to me what sort of merit there is in braving death in order to be guilty of a crime?

But, taking it for granted that a man exposes himself to contempt in refusing a challenge; which contempt is most to be feared, that of others for doing right, or that of ourselves for having acted wrong? Believe me, he who has a proper esteem for himself, is little sensible to the unjust reproach cast on him by others, and is only afraid of deserving it. Probity and virtue depend not on the opinion of the world, but on the nature of things; and though all mankind should approve of the action you are about, it would not be less shameful in itself. But it is a false notion, that to refrain from it, through a virtuous motive, would be bringing yourself into contempt. The virtuous man, whose whole life is irreproachable, and who never betrayed any marks  
of

of cowardice. will refuse to stain his hands with blood, and will be only the more respected for such refusal. Always ready to serve his country, to protect the weak, to discharge his duty on the most dangerous occasions, and to defend, in every just and reasonable cause, what is dear to him, at the hazard of his life, he displays throughout the whole of his conduct that unshaken fortitude which is inseparable from true courage. Animated by the testimony of a good conscience, he appears undaunted, and neither flies from, nor seeks his enemy. It is easily observed that he fears less to die than to act basely; that he dreads the crime, but not the danger. If at any time the mean prejudices of the world raise a clamour against him, the conduct of his whole life is his testimony, and every action is approved by a behaviour so uniformly irreproachable.

But do you know what makes this moderation so painful to the generality of men? It is the difficulty of supporting it with propriety. It is the necessity they lie under of never impeaching it by an unworthy action: for if the fear of doing ill does not restrain men in one case, why should it in another, where that restraint may be attributed to a more natural motive? Hence, it is plain it does not proceed from virtue, but cowardice; and it is with justice that such scruples are laughed at, as appear only in cases of danger. Have you not observed that persons captious, and ready to affront others, are, for the most part, bad men, who, for fear of having



the contempt in which they are universally held publicly exposed, endeavour to screen, by some *honourable* quarrels, the infamy of their lives: Is it for you to imitate such wretches as these? Let us set aside men of a military profession, who sell their blood for pay; and who, unwilling to be degraded from their rank, calculate from their interest what they owe to their honour, and know to a shilling the value of their lives. - Let us, my friend, leave these gentlemen to their fighting. Nothing is less honourable than that honour about which they make such a noise; and which is nothing more than an absurd custom, a false imitation of virtue, which prides itself in the greatest crimes. Your honour is not in the power of another: it depends on yourself, and not on the opinion of the world; its defense is neither in the sword nor the buckler, but in a life of integrity and virtue; a proof of greater courage than to brave death in a duel.—

On these principles you may reconcile the encomiums I have always bestowed on true valour, with the contempt I have as constantly expressed for the base pretenders to courage. I admire men of spirit, and hate cowards; I would break with a pusillanimous lover, who should betray the want of a proper resolution in cases of danger, and think, with all the rest of my sex, that the ardours of true courage heighten those of love. But I would have such courage exerted only on lawful occasions, and not an idle parade made of it, when it is unnecessary,

as

as if there was some fear of not having it ready when it should be called for. There are cowards, who will make one effort to exert their courage, that they may have a pretence to avoid danger the rest of their lives. True fortitude is more constant, and less impetuous; it is always what it ought to be, and wants neither the spur nor the rein: the man of real magnanimity carries it always about him; in fighting he exerts it against his enemy, in company against calumny and falsehood, and on a sick bed against the attacks of pain, and the horrors of death. That fortitude of mind which inspires true courage is always exerted; it places virtue out of the reach of events, and does not consist in braving danger, but in not fearing it. Such, my friend, is the merit of that courage I have often commended, and which I would admire in you. All other pretences to bravery are wild, extravagant, and brutal; it is even cowardice to submit to them; and I despise as much the man who runs himself into needless danger, as him who turns his back on that which he ought to encounter.

If I am not much mistaken, I have now made it clear, that, in this your quarrel with Lord B——, your own honour is not at all concerned; that you bring mine in question by drawing your sword to avenge it; that such conduct is neither just, reasonable, nor lawful; that it by no means agrees with the sentiments you profess, but belongs only to bad men, who make use of their courage as a supplement to

virtues they do not possess, or to officers that fight not for honour but interest; that there is more true courage in despising than adopting it; that the inconveniences to which you expose yourself by rejecting it are inseparable from the practice of your duty, and are more apparent than real; in fine, that men who are the most ready to recur to the sword are always those of the most suspicious characters. From all which I conclude, that you cannot either give or accept a challenge on this occasion, without giving up at once the cause of reason, virtue, honour, and Eloisa. Canvass my arguments as you please, heap sophism on sophism as you will, it will be always found that a man of true courage is not a coward, and that a man of virtue cannot be without honour. And I think I have demonstrated as clearly, that a man of true courage despises, and a man of virtue abhors duelling.

I thought proper, my friend, in so serious and important an affair, to speak to you only the plain language of reason, and to represent things simply as they are. If I would have described them as they appear to me, and engaged the passions and humanity in the cause, I should have addressed you in a different style. You know that my father had the misfortune, in his youth, to kill his antagonist in a duel; that antagonist was his friend, they fought with regret, but were obliged to it by that absurd notion of a point of honour. That fatal blow which deprived the one of life, robbed the other of his  
4 peace

peace of mind for ever. From that time has the most cruel remorse incessantly preyed on his heart: he is often heard to sigh and weep in private: his imagination still represents to him the fatal steel, thrust by his cruel hand into the breast of the man he loved: his slumbers are disturbed by the appearances of his pale and bleeding friend: he looks with terror on the mortal wound: he endeavours to stop the blood that flows from it: he is seized with horror, and cries out, Will this corpse never cease pursuing me? It is five years since he lost the only support of his name, and hope of his family; since when, he has reproached himself with his death, as a just judgement from heaven, which avenged on him the loss of that unhappy father, whom he deprived of an only son.

I must confess that all this, added to my natural aversion to cruelty, fills me with such horror at duels, that I regard them as instances of the lowest degree of brutality into which mankind can possibly descend. I look upon those, who go cheerfully to a duel, in no other light than as wild beasts going to tear each other to pieces; and, if there remains the least sentiment of humanity within them, I think the murdered less to be pitied than the murderer. Observe those men who are accustomed to this horrid practice; they only brave remorse, by stifling the voice of nature; they grow by degrees cruel and insensible; they sport with the lives of others, and their punishment for having turned a deaf ear  
to

to humanity, is to lose at length every sense of it. How shocking must be such a situation? Is it possible you can desire to be like them? No, you were never made for such a state of detestable brutality: be careful of the first step that leads to it: your mind is yet undepraved and innocent: begin not to debase it, at the hazard of your life, by an attempt that has no virtue, a crime that has no temptation, and a point of honour founded only on absurdity.

I have said nothing to you of your Eloisa; she will be a gainer no doubt, by leaving your heart to speak for her. One word, only one word, and I leave her to you. You have sometimes honoured me with the endearing name of wife; perhaps I ought at this time to bear that of mother. Will you leave me a widow before we are legally united?

*P. S.* I make use of an authority in this letter which no prudent man ever resisted. If you refuse to submit to it, I have nothing further to say to you: but think of it well beforehand. Take a week's time for reflexion, and to meditate on this important subject. It is not for any particular reason I demand this delay, but for my own pleasure. Remember, I make use only on this occasion of a right, which you yourself have given me over you, and which extends at least to what I now require.

L E T T E R

## L E T T E R , LVIII.

FROM ELOISA TO LORD B——.

**I** Have no intention, in writing to your Lordship, to accuse or complain of you; since you are pleased to affront me, I must certainly be the offender, though I may be ignorant of my offense. Would any gentleman seek to dishonour a reputable family without a cause? Surely no: therefore satisfy your revenge, if you believe it just. This letter will furnish you with an easy method of ruining an unhappy girl, who can never forgive herself for having offended you, and who commits to your discretion that honour which you intend to blast. Yes, my Lord, your imputations were just: I have a lover, whom I sincerely love; my heart, my person, are entirely his, and death only can dissolve our union. This lover is the very man whom you honour with your friendship, and he deserves it, because he loves you, and is virtuous. Nevertheless, he must perish by your hand. Offended honour, I know, can be appeased only by a human sacrifice. I know that his own courage will prove his destruction. I am convinced, that in a combat in which you have so little to fear his intrepid heart will impatiently rush upon the point of your sword. I have endeavoured to restrain his inconsiderate ardour, by the power of reason; but, alas! even whilst I was writing, I was conscious of the inutility of my arguments:

What

What opinion soever I may have of his virtue, I do not believe it so sublime as to detach him from a false point of honour. You may safely anticipate the pleasure you will have in piercing the heart of your friend: but be assured, barbarous man, that you shall never enjoy that of being witness to my tears and my despair. No, I swear by that sacred flame which fills my whole heart, that I will not survive one single day the man for whom alone I breathe! Yes, Sir, you will reap the glory of having, in one instant, sent to the grave two unhappy lovers, whose offense was not intentional, and by whom you were honoured and esteemed.

I have heard, my lord, that you have a great soul, and a feeling heart: if these will allow you the peaceful enjoyment of your revenge, heaven grant, when I am no more, that they may inspire you with some compassion for my poor disconsolate parents, whose grief for their only child will endure for ever.

## L E T T E R LIX.

FROM MR. ORBE TO ELOISA.

**I** Seize the first moment, in obedience to your commands, to render an account of my proceedings. I am this instant returned from my visit to Lord B——, who is not yet able to walk without support. I gave him your letter, which he opened with impatience. He showed some  
emotion

emotion while he was reading: he paused; read it a second time, and the agitation of his mind was then more apparent. When he had done, these were his words: "*You know, Sir, that affairs of honour have their fixed rules, which cannot be dispensed with. You were a witness to what passed in this. It must be regularly determined. Choose two of your friends, and give yourself the trouble to return with them hither to-morrow morning, and you shall then know my resolution.*" I urged the impropriety of making others acquainted with an affair which had happened among ourselves. To which he hastily replied: "*I know what ought to be done, and shall act properly. Bring your two friends, or I have nothing to say to you.*" I then took my leave, and have ever since racked my brain ineffectually to penetrate into his design. Be it as it will, I shall see you this evening, and to-morrow shall act as you may advise. If you think proper that I should wait on his lordship with my attendants, I will take care to choose such as may be depended on, at all events.

---

L E T T E R LX.

TO ELOISA.

**L**AY aside your fears, my gentle Eloisa; and, from the following recital of what has happened, know and partake of the sentiments of your friend.

I was so full of indignation when I received  
your



your letter, that I could hardly read it with the attention it deserved. I should have made fine work in attempting to refute it: I was then too rash and inconsiderate. You may be in the right, said I to myself, but I will never be persuaded to put up an affront injurious to my Eloisa. — Though I were to lose you, and even die in a wrong cause, I will never suffer any one to show you less respect than is your due: but whilst I have life you shall be revered by all that approach you, even as my own heart reveres you. I did not hesitate, however, on the week's delay you required: the accident which had happened to Lord B——, and my vow of obedience, concurred in rendering it necessary. In the meantime, being resolved, agreeably to your commands, to employ that interval in meditating on the subject of your letter, I read it over again and again, and am reflecting on it continually; not with a view, however, to change my design, but to justify it.

I had it in my hand this morning, perusing again, with some uneasiness of mind, those too sensible and judicious arguments that made against me, when somebody knocked at the door of my chamber. It was opened, and immediately entered Lord F——, without his sword, leaning on his cane; he was followed by three gentlemen, one of whom I observed to be Mr. Orbe. Surprised at so unexpected a visit, I waited silently for the consequence; when my lord requested of me a moment's audience, and  
begged

begged leave to say and do as he pleased without interruption. " You must (says he) give me your express permission: the presence of these gentlemen, who are your friends, will excuse you from any supposed indiscretion." I promised without hesitation not to interrupt him, when, to my great astonishment, his lordship immediately fell upon his knee. Surprised at seeing him in such an attitude, I would have raised him up; but after putting me in mind of my promise, he proceeded in the following words: " I am come, Sir, openly to retract the abuse, which, when in liquor, I uttered in your company. The injustice of such behaviour renders it more injurious to me than to you; and therefore I ought publickly to disavow it. I submit to whatever punishment you please to inflict on me, and shall not think my honour re-established, till my fault is repaired. Then, grant me the pardon I ask, on what conditions you think fit, and restore me your friendship."—" My lord (returned I) I have the truest sense of your generosity and greatness of mind, and take a pleasure in distinguishing between the discourse which your heart dictates, and that which may escape you when you are not yourself: let that in question be forever forgotten." I immediately raised him, and falling into my arms, he cordially embraced me. Then turning about to the company, " Gentlemen (said he) I thank you for your complaisance. Men of honour, like you (added he, with a bold air and resolute tone of

of voice) know that he who thus repairs the injury he has done will not submit to receive an injury from any man. You may publish what you have seen." He then invited all of us to sup with him this evening, and the gentlemen left us. We were no sooner alone, than his lordship embraced me again, in a more tender and friendly manner; then taking me by the hand and seating himself down by me, "Happy man (said he) may you long enjoy the felicity you deserve! the heart of Eloisa is your's, may you be both"—"What do you mean, my lord? (said I, interrupting him :) have you lost your senses?"—"No (returned he, smiling) but I was very near losing them, and it had perhaps been all over with me, if she who took them away had not restored them." He then gave me a letter that I was surprised to see written by a hand, which never before wrote to any man but myself. What emotions did I feel in its perusal! I traced the passion of an incomparable woman, who would make a sacrifice of herself to save her lover; and I discovered Eloisa. But when I came to the passage, wherein she protests she would never survive the most fortunate of men, how did I not shudder at the dangers I had escaped! I could not help complaining that I was loved too well, and my fears convinced me you are mortal. Ah! restore me that courage of which you have deprived me! I had enough to set death at defiance, when it threatened only myself, but I shrunk when my better half was in danger.

While

While I was indulging myself in these cruel reflexions, I paid little attention to his lordship's discourse, till I heard the name of Eloisa. His conversation gave me pleasure, as it did not excite my jealousy. He seemed extremely to regret his having disturbed our mutual passion and your repose: he respects you indeed beyond any other woman in the world; and, being ashamed to excuse himself to you, begged me to receive his apology in your name, and to prevail on you to accept it. "I consider you (says he) as her representative, and cannot humble myself too much to one she loves; being incapable, without having compromised this affair, to address myself personally to her, or even mention her name to you." He frankly confessed to me he had entertained for you those sentiments, which every one must do who looks on Eloisa: but that his was rather a tender admiration than love; that he had formed neither hope nor pretension, but had given up all thoughts of either on hearing of our connexions; and that the injurious discourse which escaped him was the effect of liquor, and not of jealousy. He talked of love like a philosopher, who thinks his mind superior to the passions; but, for my part, I am mistaken if he has not already felt a passion which will prevent any other from taking deep root in his breast. He mistakes a weakness of heart for the effect of reason; but I know, that to love Eloisa, and be willing to renounce her, is not among the virtues of human nature.

He

He desired me to give him the history of our amour, and an account of the causes which prevented our happiness. I thought that, after the explicitness of your letter, a partial confidence might be dangerous and unreasonable. I made it therefore complete, and he listened to me with an attention that convinced me of his sincerity. More than once I saw the tears come into his eyes, while his heart seemed most tenderly affected: above all, I observed the powerful impressions which the triumphs of virtue made on his mind; and I please myself in having raised up for Claud Anet a new protector, no less zealous than your father. When I had done, "There are neither incidents nor adventures (said he) in what you have related; and yet the catastrophe of a Romance could not equally affect me; so well is a want of variety atoned for by sentiments; and of striking actions supplied by instances of a virtuous behaviour. Your's are such extraordinary minds that they are not to be guided by common rules: your happiness is not to be attained in the same manner, nor is it of the same species with that of others. They seek power and pre-eminence; you require only tenderness and tranquillity. There is blended with your affections a virtuous emulation, that elevates both; and you would be less deserving of each other if you were not mutually in love. But love, he presumed to say, will one day lose its power (for give him, Eloisa, that blasphemous expression, spoken in the ignorance of

of his heart) the power of love (said he) will one day be lost, while that of virtue will remain.—O, my Eloisa! may our virtues but subsist as long as our love! Heaven will require no more.

In fine, I found that the philosophical inflexibility of his nation had no influence over the natural humanity of this honest Englishman; but that his heart was really interested in our difficulties. If wealth and credit can be useful to us, I believe we have some reason to depend on his service. But, alas! how shall credit or riches operate to make us happy?

This interview, in which we did not count the hours, lasted till dinner-time; I ordered a pullet for dinner, after which we continued our discourse. Among other topics, we fell upon the step his lordship had taken, with regard to myself, in the morning, on which I could not help expressing my surprise at a procedure so solemn and uncommon. But, repeating the reasons he had already given me, he added, that to give a partial satisfaction was unworthy a man of courage: that he ought to make a complete one or none at all, lest he should only debase himself, without making any reparation; and lest a concession made involuntarily, and with an ill grace, should be attributed to fear. “ Besides (continued he) my reputation is established; I can do you justice without incurring the suspicion of cowardice; but you, who are young, and just beginning the world, ought to clear yourself so well of the first affair you are engaged in

as to tempt no one to involve you in a second. The world is full of those artful cowards, who are upon the catch, as one may say, to taste their man; that is, to find out some greater coward than themselves to show their valour upon. I would save a man of honour, like you, the trouble of chastising such scoundrels; I had rather, if they want a lesson, that they should take it of me than you: for one quarrel, more or less, on the hands of a man who has already had many, signifies nothing: whereas, it is a kind of disgrace to have had but one, and the lover of Eloisa should be exempt from it."

This is, in abstract, my long conversation with Lord B——; of which I thought proper to give you an account, that you might prescribe the manner in which I ought to behave to him.

As you ought now to be composed, chase from your mind, I conjure you, those dreadful apprehensions which have found a place there for some days past. Think of the care you should take in the uncertainty of your present condition. Oh! should you soon give me life in a third being! Should a charming pledge——Too flattering hope! dost thou come again to deceive me?—I wish! I fear! I am lost in perplexity! Oh! Thou dearest charmer of my heart, let us live but to love, and let heaven dispose of us as it may.

P. S. I forgot to tell you that my lord offered me your letter, and that I made no difficulty of

of taking it; thinking it improper that it should remain in the hands of a third person. I will return it you the first time I see you: for, as to myself, I have no occasion for it; it is deeply engraven in my heart.

## L E T T E R L X I.

FROM ELOISA.

**B**RING my Lord B—— hither to-morrow, that I may throw myself at his feet, as he has done at your's. What greatness of mind! What generosity! Oh! how little do we seem, compared to him! Preserve so inestimable a friend as you would the apple of your eye. Perhaps he would be less valuable, were he of a more even temper; was there ever a man without some vices who had great virtues?

A thousand distresses of various kinds had sunk my spirits to the lowest ebb; but your letter has rekindled my extinguished hopes. In dissipating my fears, it has rendered my anxiety the more supportable. I feel now I have strength enough to bear up under it. You live, you love me; neither your own, nor the blood of your friend has been spilt, and your honour is secured; I am not then completely miserable.

Fail not to meet me to-morrow. I never had so much reason for seeing you, nor so little hope of having that pleasure long. Farewell, my dear friend, instead of saying, let us live but to  
 Vol. I. M love,



love, you should have said, alas! let us love that we may live.

---

## L E T T E R L X H.

FROM CLARA.

**M**UST I be always, my dear cousin, under the necessity of performing the most disagreeable offices of friendship? Must I always, in the bitterness of my own heart, be giving affliction to your's, by cruel intelligence? Our sentiments, alas! are the same, and you are sensible I can give no new uneasiness to you which I have not first experienced myself. Oh! that I could but conceal your misfortune without increasing it! or that a friendship like our's were not as binding as love! How readily might I throw off that chagrin I am now obliged to communicate! Last night, when the concert was over, and your mother and you were gone home, in company with your friend and Mr. Orbe, our two fathers and Lord B—— were left to talk politics together; the disagreeableness of the subject, of which indeed I am quite surfeited, soon made me retire to my own chamber. In about half an hour, I heard the name of your friend repeated with some vehemence; on which I found the conversation had changed its subject, and therefore listened to it with some attention; when I gathered by what followed, that his lordship had ventured to propose a match between you and your friend, whom he frankly called

called his, and on whom, as such, he offered to make a suitable settlement. Your father rejected the proposal with disdain, and upon that the conversation began to grow warm. "I must tell you, Sir (said my lord) that, notwithstanding your prejudices, he is of all men the most worthy of her, and perhaps the most likely to make her happy. He has received from nature every gift that is independent of the world; and has embellished them by all those talents which depended on himself. He is young, tall; well-made, and ingenious: he has the advantages of education, sense, manners, and courage; he has a fine genius and a sound mind; what then does he require to make him worthy of your daughter? Is it a fortune? He shall have one. A third part of my own will make him the richest man of this country: nay, I will give him, if it be necessary, the half. Does he want a title? ridiculous prerogative, in a country where nobility is more troublesome than useful! But doubt it not, he is noble: not that his nobility is made out in writing upon an old parchment, but it is engraven in indelible characters on his heart. In a word, if you prefer the dictates of reason and sense to groundless prejudices, and if you love your daughter better than empty titles, you will give her to him."

On this your father expressed himself in a violent passion: he treated the proposal as absurd and ridiculous. "How! my lord! (said he) is it possible a man of honour, as you are, can enter-

tain such a thought, that the last surviving branch of an illustrious family should go to lose and degrade its name, in that of nobody knows who; a fellow without home, and reduced to subsist upon charity.”—“Hold Sir (interrupted my lord) you are speaking of my friend; consider that I must take upon myself every injury done him in my company, and that such language as is injurious to a man of honour, is more so to him who makes use of it. Such *Fellows* are more respectable than all the country 'squires in Europe; and I defy you to point out a more honourable way to fortune, than by accepting the debts of esteem, or the gifts of friendship. If my friend does not trace his descent, as you do, from a long and doubtful succession of ancestors, he will lay the foundation, and be the honour of his own house; as the first of your ancestors did that of your's. Can you think yourself dishonoured by your alliance to the head of your family, without falling under the contempt you have for him? How many great families would sink again into oblivion, if we respected only those which descended from truly respectable originals! Judge of the past by the present; for two or three honest citizens ennobled by virtuous means, a thousand knaves find every day the way to aggrandise themselves and families. But, to what end serves that nobility, of which their descendants are so proud, unless it be to prove the in-

justice and infamy of their ancestors\*? There are, I must confess, a great number of bad men among the common people; but the odds are always twenty to one against a gentleman, that he is descended from a scoundrel. Let us, if you will, set aside descent, and compare only merit and utility. You have borne arms in the service and pay of a foreign prince; his father fought without pay in the service of his country. If you have well served, you have been well paid; and, whatever honour you may have acquired by arms, a hundred Plebeians may have acquired still more.

“ In what consists the honour, then (continued my lord) of that nobility of which you are so tenacious? How does it affect the glory of one’s country, or the good of mankind? A mortal enemy to liberty and the laws, what did it ever produce in most of those countries where it has flourished, but the rod of tyranny, and the oppression of the people? Will you presume to boast, in a republick, of a rank that is destructive to virtue and humanity? Of a rank that makes its boast of slavery, and wherein men blush to be men? Read the annals of your own country: what have any of the nobility merited of her? Were any of her deliverers nobles? The *Fursts*, the *Tells*, the *Stouffachers*, were

M 3

they

\* Titular grants are not very common in the present age, except those which are bought, or are obtained by placemen; the most honourable appendage to which, that I know of, is the privilege of not being hanged.

they gentlemen? What, then, is that absurd honour about which you make so much noise?"

Think, my dear, what I suffered to hear this respectable man thus injure, by an ill-concerted application, the cause of that friend whom he endeavoured to serve. Your father being irritated by so many galling, though general invectives, strove to retort them by personal ones. He told his lordship plainly, that never any man of his condition talked in the manner he had done. "Trouble not yourself to plead another's cause (added he roughly :) honourable as you are stiled, I doubt much if you could make your own good, on the subject in question. You demand my daughter for your pretended friend, without knowing whether you are yourself an equal match for her; and I know enough of the English nobility to entertain, from your discourse, a very indifferent opinion of your's."

To this his lordship answered; "Whatever you may think of me, Sir, I should be very sorry to be able to give no other proof of my merit than the name of a man who died five hundred years ago. If you know the nobility of England, you know that it is the least prejudiced, best informed, most sensible, and bravest of all Europe; after which, it is needless to ask whether it be the most ancient; for, when we talk of what is, we never mind what has been. We are not, it is true, the slaves, but the friends of our prince; not the oppressors of a people, but their leaders. The guardians of liberty, the pillars of our country,  
and

and the support of the throne, we maintain an equilibrium between the people and the king. Our first regards are due to the nation, our second to him that governs: we consult not his will but his just prerogative. Supreme judges in the House of Peers, and sometimes legislators, we render equal justice to the king and people, and suffer no one to say *God and my sword*, but only *God and my right*.

“Such, Sir (continued he) is that respectable nobility with which you are unacquainted; as ancient as any other, but more proud of its merit than of its ancestors. I am one, not the lowest in rank of that illustrious order, and believe, whatever be your pretensions, that I am your equal in every respect. I have a sister unmarried; she is young, amiable, rich, and in no wise inferior to Eloisa, except in those qualities which with you pass for nothing. Now, Sir, if after being enamoured with your daughter, it were possible for any one to change the object of his affections, and admire another, I should think it an honour to accept the man for my brother, though without a fortune, whom I propose to you for a son with half my estate.”

† I knew matters would only be aggravated by your father's reply; and though I was struck with admiration at my Lord B——'s generosity, I saw plainly that he would totally ruin the negotiation he had undertaken. I went in, therefore, to prevent things from going farther. My entrance broke off the conversation, and

immediately after they coldly took leave of each other and parted. As to my father, he behaved very well in the dispute. At first he seconded the proposal; but, finding that your's would hear nothing of it, he took the side of his brother-in-law, and by taking proper opportunities to moderate the contest, prevented them from going beyond those bounds they would certainly have trespassed, had they been alone. After their departure, he related to me what had happened; and, as I foresaw where his discourse would end, I readily told him, that things being in such a situation, it would be improper the person in question should see you so often here; and that it would be better for him not to come hither at all, if such an intimation would not be putting a kind of affront on Mr. Orbe, his friend; but that I should desire him to bring Lord B—— less frequently for the future. This, my dear, was the best I could do, to prevent our door being entirely shut against him.

But this is not all. The crisis in which you stand at present obliges me to return to my former advice. The affair between my Lord B—— and your friend has made all the noise in town which was natural to expect. For though Mr. Orbe has kept the original cause of their quarrel a secret, the circumstances are too publick to suffer it to lie concealed. Every one has suspicions, makes conjectures, and some go so far as to name Eloisa. The report of the watch was not so totally suppressed as not to be remembered;  
and

and you are not ignorant, that, in the eye of the world, a bare suspicion of the truth is looked upon as evidence. All that I can say for your consolation is, that in general your choice is approved, and every body thinks with pleasure on the union of so charming a couple. This confirms me in the opinion that your friend has behaved himself well in this country, and is not less beloved than yourself. But what is the publick voice to your inflexible father? All this talk has already reached, or will come to his ear ; and I tremble to think of the effect it may produce, if you do not speedily take some measures to prevent his anger. You must expect from him an explanation terrible to yourself, and perhaps still worse for your friend. Not that I think, at his age, he will condescend to challenge a young man he thinks unworthy his sword : but the influence he has in the town will furnish him, if he has a mind to it, with a thousand means to stir up a party against him ; and it is to be feared that his passion will be too ready to excite him to do it.

On my knees, therefore, I conjure you, my dear friend, to think on the dangers that surround you, and the terrible risk you run, which increases every moment. You have been extremely fortunate to escape hitherto, in the midst of such hazards ; but, while it is yet time, I beg of you to let the veil of prudence be thrown over the secret of your amours ; and not to push your fortune farther, lest it should involve



in your misfortunes the man who has been the cause of them. Believe me, my dear, the future is uncertain; a thousand accidents may happen unexpectedly in your favour; but, for the present, I have said, and repeat it most earnestly, send away your friend, or you are undone.

---

## L E T T E R LXIII.

FROM ELOISA TO CLARA.

**A**LL that you foresaw, my dear, is come to pass. Last night, about an hour after we got home, my father entered my mother's apartment, his eyes sparkling, and his countenance inflamed with anger; in a word, so irritated as I never saw him before. I found immediately that he had either just left a quarrel, or was seeking occasion to begin one: and my guilty conscience made me tremble for the consequence.

He began, by exclaiming violently, but in general terms, against such mothers as indiscreetly invite to their houses young fellows without family or fortune, whose acquaintance only brings shame and scandal on those who cultivate it. Finding this not sufficient to draw an answer from an intimidated woman, he brought up particularly, as an example, what had passed in her own house, since she had introduced a pretended wit, an empty babler, more fit to debauch the mind of a modest young woman

woman than to instruct her in any thing that is good.

My mother, who now saw she could get little by holding her tongue, took him up at the word debauch, and asked what he had ever seen in the conduct, or knew of the character of the person he spoke of, to authorise such base suspicions. "I did not conceive (she added) that genius and merit were to be excluded from society. To whom, pray, would you have your house open, if fine talents and good behaviour have no pretensions to admittance?"—"To our equals, madam (he replied in a fury;) to such as might repair the honour of a daughter if they should injure it."—"No, Sir (said she) but rather to people of virtue who cannot injure it."

"Know, madam, that the presumption of soliciting an alliance with my family, without a title to that honour, is highly injurious."—"So far from thinking it injurious (returned my mother) I think it, on the contrary, the highest mark of esteem: but I know not that the person you exclaim against has made any such pretensions."

"He has done it, madam, and will do worse, if I do not take proper care to prevent him; but, for the future, I shall take upon myself the charge you, have executed so ill."

On this began a dangerous altercation between them; by which I found they were both ignorant of those reports, which you say have been spread about the town. During this time, your unworthy cousin could, nevertheless, have

wished herself buried an hundred feet in the earth. Think of the best and most abused of mothers lavishing encomiums on her guilty daughter, and praising her for all those virtues she has lost, in the most respectful, or rather to me the most mortifying terms. Think of an angry father, profuse of injurious expressions; and yet, in the height of his indignation, not letting one escape him in the least reflecting on the prudence of her, who, torn by remorse, and humbled with shame, could hardly support his presence.

Oh! the inconceivable torture of a bleeding heart, reproaching itself with unsuspected crimes! How depressing and insupportable is the burthen of unmerited praise, and of an esteem of which the heart is conscious it is unworthy! I was, indeed, so terribly oppressed, that, in order to free myself from so cruel a situation, I was just going, if the impetuosity of his temper would have given me time, to confess all. But he was so enraged as to repeat over and over a hundred times the same things, and yet to diversify the subject every moment. He took notice of my looks, cast down, and affrighted, in consequence of my remorse; and if he did not construe them into those of my guilt, he did into looks of my love; but, to shame me the more, he abused the object of it in terms so odious and contemptible, that, in spite of all my endeavours, I could not let him proceed without interruption. I know not whence, my dear, I had so much courage

rage, or how I came so far to trespass the bounds of modesty and duty : but, if I ventured to break for a moment that respectful silence they dictate, I suffered for it, as you will see, very severely. “ For heaven’s sake, my dear father (said I) be pacified : never could your daughter be in danger from a man deserving such abuse.” I had scarce spoken, when, as if he had felt himself reproved by what I said, or that his passion wanted only a pretext for extremities, he flew upon your poor friend, and for the first time in my life, I received from him a box on the ear : nor was this all, but, giving himself up entirely to his passion, he proceeded to beat me without mercy, notwithstanding my mother threw herself in between us, to screen me from his blows, and received many of those which were intended for me. At length, in running back to avoid them, my foot slipped, and I fell down with my face against the foot of a table,

Here ended the triumph of passion, and began that of nature. My fall, the sight of my blood, my tears, and those of my mother greatly affected him. He raised me up, with an air of affliction and sollicitude ; and having placed me in a chair, they both eagerly enquired where I was hurt. I had received only a slight bruise on my forehead, and bled only at the nose. I saw, nevertheless, by the alteration in the air and voice of my father, that he was displeased at what he had done. He was not, however, immediately reconciled to me ; paternal authority  
did

did not permit so abrupt a change ; but he apologized with many tender excuses to my mother ; and I saw plainly, by the looks he cast on me, to whom half of his apologies were indirectly addressed. Surely, my dear, there is no confusion so affecting as that of a tender father, who thinks himself to blame in his treatment of a child.

Supper being ready, it was ordered to be put back, that I might have time to compose myself ; and my father, unwilling the servants should see any thing of my disorder, went himself for a glass of water ; while my mother was bathing the contusion on my forehead. Ah ! my dear, how I pitied her ! already in a very ill and languishing state of health, how gladly would she have been excused from being witness to such a scene ! How little less did she stand in need of assistance than I !

At supper, my father did not speak to me, but I could see his silence was the effect of shame, and not of disdain : he pretended to find every thing extremely good, in order to bid my mother help me to it ; and, what touched me the most sensibly was, that he took all occasions to call me his daughter, and not Eloisa, as is customary with him.

After supper, the evening was so cold that my mother ordered a fire in her chamber : she placing herself on one side, and my father on the other, I went to take a chair, to sit down in the middle ; when, laying hold of my  
gown

gown, and drawing me gently to him, he placed me on his knee, without speaking a word. This was done immediately, and by a sort of involuntary impulse, that he seemed to be almost sorry for it a moment afterwards. But I was on his knee, and he could not well push me from him again, and what added to his apparent condescension, he was obliged to support me with his arms in that attitude. All this passed in a kind of reluctant silence; but I perceived him, every now and then, ready to give me an involuntary embrace, which however he resisted, at the same time endeavouring to stifle a sigh, which came from the bottom of his heart. A certain false shame prevented his paternal arms from clasping me with that tenderness he too plainly felt: a certain gravity, he was ashamed to depart from, a confusion he durst not overcome, occasioned between a father and his daughter the same charming embarrassment, as love and modesty cause between lovers; in the mean while, a most affectionate mother, transported with pleasure, secretly enjoyed the delightful sight. I saw, I felt it all, and could no longer support a scene of such melting tenderness. I pretended to slip down; and, to save myself, threw my arm round my father's neck, laying my face close to his venerable cheek, which I pressed with repeated kisses, and bathed with my tears. At the same time, by those which flowed plentifully from his eyes, I could perceive him greatly relieved; while my mother embraced us both,

and

and partook of our transports. How sweet, how peaceful is innocence! which alone was wanting to make this the most delightful moment of my life!

This morning, lassitude, and the pain I felt from my fall, having kept me in bed later than usual, my father came into my chamber before I was up; when asking kindly after my health, he sat down by the side of my bed; and taking one of my hands into his, he condescended so far as to kiss it several times, calling me at the same time his dear daughter, and expressing his sorrow for his resentment. I told him, I should think myself but too happy to suffer as much every day, to have the pleasure he then gave me in return; and that the severest treatment I could receive from him would be fully recompensed by the smallest instance of his kindness.

Then, putting on a more serious air, he resumed the subject of yesterday, and signified his pleasure in civil but positive terms. "You know (says he) the husband I design for you: I intimated to you my intentions concerning him on my arrival, and shall never change them, on that head. As to the man whom Lord B—— spoke of, though I shall not dispute the merit every body allows him, I know not whether he has of himself conceived the ridiculous hopes of being allied to me, or if it has been instilled into him by others; but, be assured, that, had I even no other person in view, and he was in possession of all the guineas in England, I would never accept

cept him for my son-in-law. I forbid you, therefore, either to see or speak to him as long as you live, and that as well for the sake of his honour as your own. I never indeed felt any great regard for him; but now I mortally hate him, for the outrages he has been the occasion of my committing, and shall never forgive him the violence I have been guilty of."

Having said this, he rose and left me, without waiting for my answer, and with the same air of severity which he had just reproached himself for assuming before. Ah! my dear cousin, what an infernal monster is prejudice; that depraves the best of hearts, and puts the voice of nature every moment to silence!

Thus ended the explanation you predicted, and of which I could not comprehend the reason till your letter informed me. I cannot well tell what revolution it has occasioned in my mind; but I find myself ever since greatly altered. I seem to look back with more regret to that happy time, when I lived content and tranquil with my family friends around me: and that the sense of my error increases with that of the blessings of which it has deprived me. Tell me, my severe monitor, tell me, if you dare be so cruel, are the joyful hours of love all gone and fled? And will they never more return? Do you perceive, alas! how gloomy and horrible is that sad apprehension? And yet, my father's commands are positive; the danger of my lover is certain. Think, my dear Clara,



on the result of such opposite motions, destroying the effects of each other in my heart. A kind of stupidity has taken possession of me, which makes me almost insensible, and leaves me neither the use of my passions nor my reason. The present moment, you tell me, is critical—I know, I feel it is: and yet I was never more incapable to conduct myself than now. I have sat down more than twenty times to write to my lover: but I am ready to sink at every line. I have no resource, my dear friend, but in you. Let me prevail on you then to think, to speak, to act for me. I put myself into your hands: whatever step you think proper to take, I hereby confirm beforehand every thing you do; I commit to your friendship that sad authority over a lover which I have bought so dear. Divide me for ever from myself. Kill me, if I must die; but do not force me to plunge the dagger in my own breast. O, my good angel! my protectress! what an employment do I engage you in! Can you have the courage to go through it? Can you find means to soften its severity? It is not my heart alone you will rend to pieces. You know, Clara, yes, you know, how sincerely I am beloved; that I have not even the consolation of being the most to be pitied. Let my heart, I beseech you, speak from your lips, and let your's sympathise with the tender compassion of love. Comfort the poor unfortunate youth, tell him, ah! tell him again and again—do you not think so,

so, my dear friend? do you not think that, in spite of prepossessions and prejudice, in spite of all obstacles and crosses, Heaven has made us for each other? Yes, tell him so—I am sure of it—we are destined to be happy. It is impossible for me to lose sight of that prospect: it is impossible for me to give up that delightful hope. Tell him, therefore, not to be too much afflicted; not to give way to despair. You need not trouble yourself to exact a promise of eternal love and fidelity; and still less to make him a needless promise of mine. Is not the assurance of both firmly rooted in our hearts? Do we not feel that we are indivisible, and that we have but one mind between us? Tell him only to hope, and that though fortune persecutes us, he may place his confidence in love; which I am certain, my dear cousin, will in some way or other compensate for the evils it makes us suffer; as I am that, however heaven may dispose of us, we shall not live long from each other.

*P. S.* After I had written the above, I went into my mother's apartment, but found myself so ill that I was obliged to return, and lie down on the bed. I even perceived——alas! I am afraid——indeed, my dear, I am afraid the fall I had last night will be of much worse consequence than I imagined. If so, all is over with me! all my hopes are vanished at once!

L E T T E R

## L E T T E R LXIV.

CLARA TO MR. ORBE.

**M**Y father hath this morning related to me the conversation he had yesterday with you. I perceive with pleasure that your expectations of what you are pleased to call your happiness are not without foundation: you know, I hope, that it will prove mine too. Esteem and friendship are already in your possession, and all of that more tender sentiment of which my heart is capable is also your's. Yet, be not deceived; as a woman, I am a kind of monster; by whatsoever strange whim of nature it happens I know not, but this I know, that my friendship is more powerful than my love. When I tell you that my Eloisa is dearer to me than yourself, you only laugh at me; and yet nothing can be more certain. Eloisa is so sensible of this, that she is more jealous for you than you are for yourself. And whilst you are contented, she is upbraiding me, that I do not love you sufficiently. I am even so strongly interested in every thing which concerns her, that her lover and you hold nearly the same place in my heart, though in a different manner. What I feel for him is friendship only; but it is violent: for you, I think, I perceive something of a certain passion called love; but then it is tranquil. Now, though this might appear sufficiently equivocal to disturb the repose  
of

of a jealous mind, I do not believe it will cause much uneasiness to you.

How far, alas! are these two poor souls from that tranquillity which we presume to enjoy! and how ill does this contentment become us, whilst our friends are in despair! It is decreed they must part, and perhaps this may be the very instant of their eternal separation. Who knows but their mutual dejection, with which we reproached them at the concert, might be a foreboding that it was the last time they should ever meet? To this hour your friend is ignorant of his destiny. In the security of his heart he still enjoys the felicity of which he is already deprived. In the very instant of despair he tastes, in idea, the shadow of happiness; and like one who is on the brink of sudden death, the poor wretch dreams of existence, unapprehensive of his fate. O heavens! it is from me he is to receive the sad sentence. O friendship divine! the idol of my soul! arm me, I beseech thee, with thy secret cruelty. Inspire me with barbarous resolution, and enable me to perform this sad duty with becoming magnanimity!

I depend on your assistance, and I should expect it even if you loved me less; for I know your tender heart: it will have no need of the zeal of love when humanity pleads. You will engage our friend to come to me to-morrow morning; but be sure not to mention a syllable of the affair. To day I must not be interrupted. I shall pass the afternoon with Eloisa. Endeavour

your

your to find Lord B——, and bring him with you about eight o'clock this evening, that we may come to some determination concerning the departure of this unhappy man, and endeavour to prevent his despair.

I have great confidence in his resolution, added to our precautions, and I have still greater dependence on his passion for Eloisa: her will, the danger of her life and honour, are motives which he cannot resist. Be it as it will, you may be assured that I shall not dream of marriage till Eloisa has recovered her peace of mind. I will not stain the matrimonial knot with the tears of my friend. So that, if you really love me, your interest will second your generosity, and it becomes your own affair, rather than that of another.

---

## LETTER LXV.

CLARA TO ELOISA.

**A**LL is over! and, in spite of her indiscretion, my Eloisa is in safety. Her secrets are buried in silence. She is still loved and cherished in the midst of her friends and relations, possessing every one's esteem, and a reputation without blemish. Consider, my friend, and tremble for the dangers which, through motives of love or shame, through fear of doing too little or too much, you have run. Learn hence, too fond or too fearful girl, never more to attempt  
to

to renconcile sentiments so incompatible; and thank heaven, that, through a happiness peculiar to yourself, you have escaped the evils that threatened you.

I would spare your sorrowing heart the particulars of your lover's cruel and necessary departure. But you desired to know them; I promised you should, and will keep my word with that sincerity which ever subsisted between us. Read on then, my dear and unhappy friend; read on, but exert your courage, and maintain your resolution.

The plan I had concerted, and of which I advised you yesterday, was punctually followed in every particular. On my return home, I found Mr. Orbe and my Lord B——; with whom I immediately began, by declaring to the latter how much we were both affected by his heroic generosity. I then gave them urgent reasons for the immediate departure of your friend, and told them the difficulties I foresaw in bringing it about. His lordship was perfectly sensible that it was necessary, and expressed much sorrow for the effects of his imprudent zeal. They both agreed it was proper to hasten the separation determined, and to lay hold of the first moment of consent, to prevent any new irresolution; and to snatch him from the danger of delay. I would have engaged Mr. Orbe to make the necessary preparations, unknown to your friend; but his lordship, regarding this affair as his own, insisted on taking charge of it. He accordingly

accordingly promised me, that his chaise should be ready at eleven o'clock this morning, adding that he would carry him off under some other pretext, and accompany him as far as it might be necessary; opening the matter to him at leisure. This expedient, however, did not appear to me sufficiently open and sincere, nor would I consent to expose him, at a distance, to the first effects of a despair, which might more easily escape the eyes of Lord B—— than mine. For the same reason, I did not close with his lordship's proposal of speaking himself to him, and prevailing on him to depart. I foresaw that negotiation would be a delicate affair, and I was unwilling to trust any body with it but myself; knowing much better how to manage his sensibility, and also that there is always a harshness in the arguments of the men which a woman best knows how to soften. I conceived, nevertheless, that my lord might be of use in preparing the way for an eclaircissement; being sensible of the effects which the discourse of a man of sense might have over a virtuous mind; and what force the persuasions of a friend might give to the arguments of a philosopher.

I engaged Lord B——, therefore, to pass the evening with him, and without saying any thing directly of his situation, to endeavour to dispose his mind insensibly to a stoical resolution. “ You, my lord, who are so well acquainted with Epictetus (says I) have now an opportunity of making some real use of him.  
Distinguish

Distinguish carefully between real and apparent good, between that which depends on ourselves and what is dependent on others. Demonstrate to him, that, whatever threatens us from without, the cause of evil is within us; and that the wise man, being always on his guard, has his happiness ever in his own power." I understood by his lordship's answer that this stroke of irony, which could not offend him, served to excite his zeal, and that he counted much on sending his friend the next day well prepared. This, indeed, was the most I expected; for in reality, I place no great dependence, any more than yourself, on all that verbose philosophy. And yet I am persuaded a virtuous man must always feel some kind of shame, in changing at night the opinions he embraced in the morning, and in denying in his heart the next day what his reason dictated for truth the preceding night.

Mr. Orbe was desirous of being of their party, and passing the evening with them; but to this I objected; as his presence might only disturb, or lay a restraint on the conversation. The interest I have in him does not prevent me from seeing he is not a match for the other two. The masculine turn of thinking in men of strong minds gives a peculiar idiom to their discourse, and makes them converse in a language to which Mr. Orbe is a stranger. In taking leave of them, I thought of the effects of his lordship's drinking punch; and, fearing he might, when in liquor, anti-



cipate my design, I laughingly hinted as much to him: to which he answered, I might be assured he would indulge himself in such habits only when it could be of no ill effect; but that he was no slave to custom; that the interview intended concerned Eloisa's honour, the fortune and perhaps the life of a man, and that man his friend. "I shall drink my punch (continued he) as usual, lest it should give our conversation an air of reserve and preparation; but that punch shall be mere lemonade; and, as he drinks none, he will not perceive it."—Don't you think it, my dear, a great mortification, to have contracted habits that make such precautions as these necessary?

I passed the night in great agitation of mind, not altogether on your account. The innocent pleasures of our early youth, the agreeableness of our long intimacy, and the closer connexions that have subsisted between us for a year past, on account of the difficulty he met with in seeing you—all this filled me with the most disagreeable apprehensions of your separation. I perceived I was going to lose, with the half of you, a part of my own existence. Awake and restless, I lay counting the clock, and when the morning dawned, I shuddered to think it was the dawn of that day which might fix the destiny of my friend. I spent the early part of the morning in meditating on my intended discourse, and in reflecting on the impressions it might make. At length the hour drew nigh, and my  
expected

expected visitor entered. He appeared much troubled, and hastily asked me after you: for he had heard, the day after your severe treatment from your father, that you was ill, which was yesterday confirmed by my Lord B——, and that you had kept your bed ever since. To avoid entering into particulars on this subject, I told him I had left you better last night, and that he would know more by the return of Hans, whom I had sent to you. My precaution was to no purpose, he went on asking me a hundred questions, to which, as they only tended to lead me from my purpose, I made short answers, and took upon me to interrogate him in my turn.

I began, by endeavouring to sound his disposition of mind, and found him grave, methodical, and reasonable. Thank heaven, said I to myself, my philosopher is well prepared. Nothing remained, therefore, but to put him to the trial. It is an usual custom to open bad news by degrees; but the knowledge I had of the furious imagination of your friend, which at half a word's speaking carries him often into the most passionate extremes, determined me to take a contrary method; as I thought it better to overwhelm him at once, and administer comfort to him afterwards, than needlessly to multiply his griefs, and give him a thousand pains instead of one. Assuming, therefore, a more serious tone, and looking at him very attentively; "Have you ever experienced, my friend (said I) what the fortitude of a great mind is capable of? Do you

think it possible for a man to renounce the object he truly loves?" I had scarce spoke, before he started up like a madman; and, clasping his hands together, struck them against his forehead, crying out, "I understand you, Eloisa is dead! my Eloisa is dead!" repeated he, in a tone of despair and horror that made me tremble. "I see through your vain circumspection, your useless cautions, that only render my tortures more lingering and cruel." Frightened as I was by so sudden a transport, I soon entered into the cause: the news he had heard of your illness, the lecture which Lord B—— had read him, our appointed meeting this morning, my evading his questions, and those I put to him, were all so many collateral circumstances combining to give him a false alarm. I saw plainly also what use I might have made of his mistake, by leaving him in it a few minutes, but I could not be cruel enough to do it. The thought of the death of the person one loves is so shocking, that any other whatever is comparatively agreeable; I hastened accordingly to make the advantage of it. "Perhaps, (said I) you will never see her again, yet she is alive, and still loves you. If Eloisa were dead, what could Clara have to say? Be thankful to heaven that, unfortunate as you are, you do not feel all those evils which might have overwhelmed you." He was so surprised, so struck, so bewildered, that, having made him sit down again, I had leisure to acquaint him with what it was necessary for him to know. At the  
same

same time I represented the generous behaviour of Lord B—— in the most amiable light, in order to divert his grief, by exciting, in his honest mind, the gentler emotions of gratitude. “You see (continued I) the present state of affairs. Eloisa is on the brink of destruction, just ready to see herself exposed to publick disgrace by the resentment of her family, by the violence of an enraged father, and her own despair. The danger increases every moment; and, whether in her own, or in the hand of a father, the poinard is every instant of her life within an inch of her heart. There remains but one way to prevent these misfortunes, and that depends entirely on you. The fate of Eloisa is in your hands. Try if you have the fortitude to save her from ruin, by leaving her; since she is no longer permitted to see you, or whether you had rather stay to be the authour and witness of her dishonour? After having done every thing for you, she puts your heart to the tryal, to see what you can do for her. It is astonishing that she bears up under her distresses. You are anxious for her life; know then that her life, her honour, her all depends on you.”

He heard me without interruption; and no sooner perfectly comprehended me, than that wild gesture, that furious look, that frightful air, which he had put on just before, immediately disappeared. A gloomy veil of sorrow and consternation spread itself over his features, while his mournful eyes and bewildered countenance

betrayed the sadness of his heart. In this situation he could hardly open his lips to make me an answer. "Must I then go? (said he, in a peculiar tone;) it is well—I will go. Have I not lived long enough?"—"No (returned I) not so, you should still live for her who loves you. Have you forgot that her life is dependent on your's?"—"Why then should our lives be separated? (cried he;) there was a time—It is not yet too late—"

I affected not to understand the last words, and was endeavouring to comfort him with some hopes, which I could see his heart rejected, when Hans returned with the good news of your health. In the joy he felt at this (he cried out) "My Eloisa lives—let her live, and if possible be happy. I will never disturb her repose—I will only bid her adieu—and, if it must be so, will leave her for ever."

"You surely know (said I) that you are not permitted to see her. You have already bidden farewell, and are parted. Consider, therefore, you will be more at ease when you are at a greater distance, and will have at least the consolation to think you have secured, by your departure, the peace and reputation of her you love. Fly, then, this hour, this moment; nor let so great a sacrifice be made too slow. Haste, lest even your delay should cause the ruin of her to whose security you have devoted yourself."—"What! (said he in a kind of fury) shall I depart without seeing her? Not see her again!

Wc

We will both perish if it must be so. I know ~~she~~ she will not think much to die with me. But I will see her, whatever may be the consequence; I will lay both my heart and life at her feet, before I am thus torn from myself."—It was not difficult for me to show the absurdity and cruelty of such a project. But the exclamation of, *Shall I see her no more!* repeated in the most doleful accents, seemed to demand of me some consolation. "Why (said I to him) do you make your misfortunes worse than they really are? Why do you give up hopes which Eloisa herself entertains? Can you believe she would think of thus parting with you, if she conceived you were not to meet again? No, my friend, you ought to know the heart of Eloisa better. You ought to know how much she prefers her love to her life. I fear, alas! too much I fear (this I confess I have added) she will soon prefer it to every thing. Believe me, Eloisa lives in hopes, since she consents to live: believe me, the cautions which her prudence dictates regard yourself more than you are aware of; and that she is more careful of herself on your account than her own." I then took out your last letter; and, showing him what were the hopes of a fond deluded girl, animated his, by the gentle warmth of her tender expressions. These few lines seemed to distil a salutary balsam into his envenomed heart. His looks softened, the tears rose into his eyes, and I had the satisfaction of seeing a sorrowful tenderness succeed by degrees

to his former despair; but your last words, so moving, so heart-felt, *we shall not live long asunder*, made him burst into a flood of tears.

“No, Eloisa, my dear Eloisa! (said he, raising his voice, and kissing the letter) no, we shall not live long asunder. Heaven will either join our hands in this world, or unite our hearts in those eternal mansions where there is no more separation.” He was now in the temper of mind I wished to have him; his former sullen sorrow gave me much uneasiness. I should not have permitted him to depart in that disposition; but, as soon as I saw him weep, and heard your endearing name come from his lips with so much tenderness, I was no longer in apprehensions for his life; for nothing is less tender than despair. The soft emotions of his heart now dictated an objection which I did not foresee. He spoke to me of the condition in which you lately suspected yourself to be; protesting he would rather die a thousand deaths than abandon you to those perils that threatened you. I took care to say nothing about the accident of your fall; telling him only that your expectations had been disappointed, and that there were no hopes of that kind. To which he answered with a deep sigh, “There will remain then no living monument of my happiness; it is gone, and”—Here his heart seemed too full for expression.

After this, it remained only for me to execute the latter part of your commission; and for which I did not think, after the intimacy in which  
you

you lived, that any preparation or apology was necessary. I mildly reproached him, therefore, for the little care he had taken of his affairs; telling him, that you feared it would be long before he would be more careful, and that in the mean time you commanded him to take care of himself for your sake, and to that end to accept of that small present which I had to make him from you. He seemed neither offended at the offer, nor to make a merit of the acceptance; telling me only, that you well knew nothing could come from you that he should not receive with transport; but that your precaution was superfluous, a little house which he had sold at Grandson, the remains of his small patrimony, having furnished him with more money, than he ever had at any one time in his life. “Besides (added he) I possess some talents, from which I can always draw a subsistence. I shall be happy to find, in the exercise of them, some diversion from my misfortunes; and, since I have seen the use to which Eloisa puts her superfluities, I regard it as a treasure sacred to the widow and the orphan, whom humanity will never permit me to neglect.” I reminded him of his former journey to the Valais, your letter, and the preciseness of your orders. “The same reasons (said I) now subsist”—“The same! (interrupted he) in an angry tone. The penalty of my refusal then, was never to see her more; if she will permit me now to stay, I will use it on those conditions. If I obey, why does she,



punish me? If I do not, what can she do worse than punish me? The same reasons! (repeated he, with some impatience.) Our union then was just commenced; it is now at an end, and I part from her perhaps for ever; there is no longer any connexion between us, we are going to be torn asunder." He pronounced these last words with such an oppression of heart, that I trembled with the apprehensions of his relapsing into that disposition of mind, out of which I had taken so much pains to extricate him. I affected therefore an air of gaiety, and told him, with a smile, that he was a child, and that I would be his tutor, as he stood greatly in need of one. "I will take charge of this (said I) and, that we may dispose of it properly in the business we shall engage in together, I insist upon knowing particularly the state of your affairs." I endeavoured thus to divert his melancholy ideas by that of a familiar correspondence to be kept up in his absence; and he, whose simplicity only sought to lay hold of every twig, as one may say, that grew near to you, came easily into my design: We accordingly settled the address of our letters; and, as the talking about these regulations was agreeable to him, I prolonged our discourse on this subject till Mr. Orbe arrived; who, on his entrance, made a signal to me that every thing was ready. Your friend, who easily understood what was meant, then desired leave to write to you; but I would not permit him. I saw that an excess of tenderness

derness might overcome him, and that, after he had got half way through his letter, we might find it impossible to prevail on him to depart. "Delays (said I) are dangerous; make haste to go; and, when you are arrived at the end of your first stage, you may write more at your ease." In saying this, I made a sign to Mr. Orbe, advanced towards him with a heavy heart, and took leave. How he left me I know not, my tears preventing my sight; my head began also to turn round, and it was high time my part was ended.

A moment afterwards, however, I heard them go hastily down stairs; on which I went to the stair-head, to look after them. There I saw your friend, in all his extravagance, throw himself on his knees, in the middle of the stairs, and kiss the steps; while Mr. Orbe had much to do to raise him from the cold stones, which he pressed with his lips, and to which he clung with his hands, sighing most bitterly. For my part, I retired, that I might not expose myself to the servants.

Soon after, Mr. Orbe returned, and, with tears in his eyes, told me it was all over, and that they were set out. It seems the chaise was ready at his door, where Lord B—— was waiting for our friend, whom, when his lordship saw, he ran to meet him, and, with the most cordial expressions of friendship, placed him in the chaise, which drove off with them like lightning.

## L E T T E R L X V I.

T O E L O I S A.

**H**OW often have I taken up, and flung down my pen! I hesitate in the first period: I know not how, I know not where, to begin. And yet it is to Eloisa I would write. 'To what a situation am I reduced? That time is, alas! no more, when a thousand pleasing ideas crowded on my mind, and flowed inexhaustibly from my pen. Those delightful moments of mutual confidence, and sweet effusion of souls, are gone and fled. We live no longer for each other—We are no more the same persons, and I no longer know to whom I am writing. Will you deign to receive, to read my letters? Will you think them sufficiently cautious and reserved? Shall I preserve the stile of our former intimacy? May I venture to speak of a passion extinguished or despised? and am I not to make as distant approaches to Eloisa, as on the first day I presumed to write? Good heavens! how different are the tedious hours of my present wretchedness from those happy, those delightful days I have passed! I but begin to exist, and am sunk into nothing. The hopes of life that warmed my heart are fled, and the gloomy prospect of death is all before me. Three revolving years have circumscribed the happiness of my existence. Would to God I had ended them, ere  
I had

I had known the misery of thus surviving myself! Oh! that I had obeyed the foreboding dictates of my heart, when once those rapid moments of delight were passed, and life presented nothing to my view for which I could wish to live! Better, doubtless, had it been that I had breathed no longer, or that those three years of life and love I enjoyed could be extracted from the number of my days. Happier is it never to taste of felicity than to have it snatched from our enjoyment. Had I been exempted from that fatal interval of happiness; had I escaped the first enchanting look that animated me to a new life, I might still have preserved my reason, have still been fit to discharge the common offices of life, and have displayed perhaps some virtues in the duration of an insipid existence. One moment of delusion hath changed the scene. I have ventured to contemplate with rapture an object on which I should not have dared to look. This presumption has produced its necessary effect, and led me insensibly to ruin; I am become a frantick, delirious wretch, a servile dispirited being, that drags along his chain in ignominy and despair.

How idle are the dreams of a distracted mind! How flattering, how deceitful the wishes of the wandering heart, that disclaims them as soon as suggested! To what end do we seek, against real evils, imaginary remedies, that are no sooner thought of than rejected? Who, that hath seen and felt the power of love, can think it possible  
there

there should be a happiness which I would purchase at the price of the supreme felicity of my first transports? No, it is impossible—Let heaven deny me all other blessings; let me be wretched, but I will indulge myself in the remembrance of pleasures past. Better is it to enjoy the recollection of my past happiness, though embittered with present sorrow, than to be for ever happy without Eloisa. Come then, dear image of my love, thou idol of my soul! come, and take possession of a heart that beats only for thee; live in exile, alleviate my sorrows, re-kindle my extinguished hopes, and prevent me from falling into despair. This unfortunate breast shall ever be thy inviolable sanctuary, whence neither the powers of heaven or earth shall ever expel thee. If I am lost to happiness, I am not to love, which renders me worthy of it—a love irresistible as the charms that gave it birth. Raised on the immoveable foundations of merit and virtue, it can never cease to exist in a mind that is immortal: it needs no future hope for its support, the remembrance of what is past will sustain it for ever.

But, how is it with my Eloisa? With her who was once so sensible of love? Can that sacred flame be extinguished in her pure and susceptible breast? Can she have lost her taste for those celestial raptures, which she alone could feel or inspire?—She drives me from her presence without pity, banishes me with shame, gives me up to despair, and sees not, through the  
error

error which misleads her, that in making me miserable, she robs herself of happiness. Believe me, my Eloisa, you will in vain seek another heart a-kin to your's. A thousand will doubtless adore you, but mine only is capable of returning your love.

Tell me, tell me sincerely, thou deceived or deceiving girl, what is become of those projects we formed together in secret? Where are fled those vain hopes, with which you so often flattered my credulous simplicity? What say you now to that sacred union my heart panted after, the secret cause of so many ardent sighs, and with which your lips and your pen have so often indulged my hopes? I presumed, alas! on your promises, to aspire to the sacred name of husband, and thought myself already the most fortunate of men. Say, cruel Eloisa, did you not flatter me thus only to render my disappointment the more mortifying, my affliction the more severe? Have I incurred this misfortune by my own fault? Have I been wanting in obedience, in tractability, in discretion? Have you ever seen me so weak and absurd in my desires, as to deserve to be thus rejected? or have I ever preferred their gratification to your absolute commands? I have done, I have studied, every thing to please you, and yet you renounce me. You undertook to make me happy, and you make me miserable. Ungrateful woman! account with me for the trust I deposited in your hands; account with me for my heart, after having

Having seduced it by a supreme felicity that raised me to an equality with angels. I envied not their lot; I was the happiest of beings; though now, alas! I am the most miserable! A single moment has deprived me of every thing, and I am fallen instantaneously from the pinnacle of happiness to the lowest gulf of misery. I touch even yet the felicity that escapes me; I have still hold of it, and lose it for ever. — — — Ah, could I but believe! — if the remains of false hope did not flatter — Why, why, ye rocks of Meillerie, whose precipices my wandering eye so often measured, why did you not assist my despair! I had then less regretted life, ere enjoyment had taught me its value.

---

L E T T E R. LXVII.

LORD B — TO CLARA.

**B**EING arrived at Besançon, I take the first opportunity to write to you the particulars of our journey; which, if not passed very agreeably, has at least been attended with no ill accident. Your friend is as well in health as can be expected for a man so sick at heart. He even endeavours to affect outwardly a kind of tranquillity, to which his heart is a stranger; and, being ashamed of his weakness, lays himself under a good deal of restraint before me. This only served, however, to betray the secret agitations of his mind; and though I seemed to be

be deceived by his behaviour, it was only to leave him to his own thoughts, with the view of opposing one part of his faculties to repress the effect of the other.

He was much dejected during the first day's journey, which I made a short one, as I saw the expedition of our travelling increased his uneasiness. A profound silence was observed on both sides; on my part, the rather, as I am sensible that ill-timed condolance only embitters violent affliction. Coldness and indifference easily find words, but silent sorrow is in those cases the language of true friendship. I began yesterday to perceive the first sparks of the fury which naturally succeeded. At dinner-time we had been scarce a quarter of an hour out of the chaise, before he turned to me, with an air of impatience, and asked me, with an ill-natured smile, "Why we rested a moment so near Eloisa?" In the evening he affected to be very talkative, but without saying a word of her, asking the same questions over and over again. He wanted one moment to know if we had reached the French territories, and the next if we should soon arrive at Vevai. The first thing he did at every stage was to sit down to write a letter, which he rumbled up, or tore to pieces, the moment afterwards. I picked up two or three of these blotted fragments, by which you may judge of the situation of his mind. I believe, however, he has by this time written a complete letter.—  
The extravagance which these first symptoms of passion



passion threaten is easily foreseen; but I cannot pretend to guess what will be its effect, or how long may be its continuance; these depend on a combination of circumstances, as the character of the man, the degree and nature of his passion, and of a thousand things which no human sagacity can determine. For my part, I can answer for the transports of his rage, but not for the fullness of his despair? for, do as we will, every man has always his life in his own power. I flatter myself, however, that he will pay a due regard to his life and my affiduities; though I depend less on the effects of my zeal, which nevertheless shall be exerted to the utmost, than on the nature of his passion, and the character of his mistress. The mind cannot long employ itself in contemplating a beloved object, without contracting a disposition similar to what it admires. The extreme sweetness of Eloisa's temper must, therefore, have softened the harshness of that passion it inspired: and I doubt not but love, in a man of such lively passions, is always more active and violent than it would be in others. I have some dependence also upon his heart: it was formed to struggle and to conquer. A love like his is not so much a weakness, as strength badly exerted. A violent and unhappy passion may smother for a time, perhaps for ever, some of his faculties; but it is itself a proof of their excellence, and of the use that may be made of them to cultivate his understanding. The sublimest wisdom is attained by the same vigour of mind  
which

which gives rise to the violent passions ; and philosophy must be attained by as fervent a zeal as that which we feel for a mistress.

Be assured, lovely Clara, I interest myself no less than you in the fate of this unfortunate couple ; not out of a sentiment of compassion, which might perhaps be only a weakness, but out of a due regard to justice and the fitness of things, which require that every one should be disposed of in a manner the most advantageous to himself and to society. Their amiable minds were doubtless formed by the hand of nature for each other. In a peaceful and happy union, at liberty to exert their talents, and display their virtues, they might have enlightened the world with the splendour of their example. Why should an absurd prejudice then cross the eternal directions of nature, and subvert the harmony of thinking Beings ? Why should the vanity of a cruel father thus *hide their light under a bushel*, and wound those tender and benevolent hearts, which were formed to sooth the pangs of others ? Are not the ties of marriage the most free, as as well as the most sacred of all engagements ? Yes, every law to lay a constraint on them is unjust. Every father who presumes to form or break them is a tyrant. This chaste and holy tie of nature is neither subjected to sovereign power nor parental authority ; but to the authority only of that common parent who hath the power over our hearts, and, by commanding  
their

their union, can at the same time make them love each other.

To what end are natural conveniencies sacrificed to those of opinion? A disagreement in rank and fortune loses itself in marriage, nor doth an equality therein tend to make the marriage state happy; but a disagreement in person and disposition ever remains, and is that which makes it necessarily miserable\*. A child, that has no rule of conduct but her fond passion, will frequently make a bad choice, but the father, who has no other rule for his than the opinion of the world, will make a worse. A daughter may want knowledge and experience to form a proper judgement of the discretion and conduct of men; a good father ought doubtless in that case to advise her. He has a right, it is even his duty to say, "My child, this is a man of probity, or that man is a knave; this is a man of sense, or

\* In some countries, agreement in rank and fortune is held so far preferable to that of nature and the heart, that an inequality in the former is judged sufficient to prevent or dissolve the most happy marriages, without any regard to the honour of the unfortunate lovers, who are daily made a sacrifice to such odious prejudices. I heard once a celebrated cause pleaded before the Parliament at Paris, wherein the distinction of rank publicly and insolently opposed honesty, justice, and the conjugal vow; the unworthy parent, who gained his cause, disinheriting his son, because he refused to act the part of a villain. The fair sex are, in that polite country, subjected in the greatest degree to the tyranny of the laws. Is it to be wondered at that they so amply avenge themselves in the looseness of their manners?

or that is a fool." Thus far ought the father to judge, the rest of right belongs to the daughter. The tyrants, who exclaim that such maxims tend to disturb the good order of society, are those who, themselves, disturb it most.

Let men rank according to their merit; and let those hearts be united that are objects of each other's choice. This is what the good order of society requires; those who would confine it to birth or riches are the real disturbers of that order; and ought to be rendered odious to the publick, or punished as enemies to society.

Justice requires that such abuses should be redressed: it is the duty of every man to set himself in opposition to violence, and to strengthen the bonds of society. You may be assured, therefore, that, if it be possible for me to effect the union of these two lovers, in spite of an obstinate father, I shall put in execution the intention of heaven, without troubling myself about the approbation of men.

You, amiable Clara, are happy in having a father, who doth not presume to judge better than yourself of the means of your own happiness. It is not, however, from his greater sagacity, perhaps, nor from his superiour tenderness, that he leaves you thus mistress of your own choice: but what signifies the cause if the effect be the same? or whether, in the liberty he allows you, his indolence supplies the place of his reason? Far from abusing that liberty, the choice you have made, at twenty years of age,  
must

must meet with the approbation of the most discrete parent. Your heart, taken up by a friendship without example, had little room for love. You have yet substituted in its place every thing that can supply the want of passion; and though less a lover than a friend, if you should not happen to prove the fondest wife, you will be certainly the most virtuous; that union, which prudence dictated, will increase with age, and end but with life. The impulse of the heart is more blind, but it is more irresistible; and the way to ruin, is to lay one's self under the cruel necessity of opposing it. Happy are those whom love unites as prudence dictates, who have no obstacles to surmount, nor difficulties to encounter! Such would be our friends, were it not for the unreasonable prejudice of an obstinate father. And such, notwithstanding, may they be yet, if one of them be well advised. By your's and Eloisa's example, we may be equally convinced that it belongs only to the parties themselves to judge how far they will be reciprocally agreeable. If love be not predominant, prudence only directs the choice, as in your case; if passion prevail, nature has already determined it, as in Eloisa's. So sacred also is the law of nature, that no human being is permitted to transgress it, or can transgress it with impunity; nor can any consideration of rank or fortune abrogate it, without involving mankind in guilt and misfortune.

Though the winter be pretty far advanced, and I am obliged to go to Rome, I shall not  
leave

leave our friend till I have brought him to such a consistency of temper that I may safely trust him with himself. I shall be tender of him, as well on his own account, as because you have entrusted him to my care. If I cannot make him happy, I will endeavour, at least, to make him prudent; and to prevail on him to bear the evils of humanity like a man. I purpose to spend a fortnight with him here; in which time I hope to hear from you and Eloisa; and that you will both assist me in binding up the wounds of a broken heart, as yet unaffected by the voice of reason, unless it speak in the language of the passions.

Enclosed is a letter for your friend. I beg you will not trust it to a messenger, but give it her with your own hands.

---

### F R A G M E N T S

*Annexed to the preceding Letter.*

**W**HY was I not permitted to see you before my departure? You were afraid our parting would be fatal! Tender Eloisa! be comforted—I am well—I am at ease—I live—I think of you—I think of the time when I was dear to you—My heart is a little oppressed—The chaise has made me giddy—My spirits are quite sunk—I cannot write much to-day; to-morrow, perhaps, I shall be able to—or I shall have no more occasion—

Whither

Whither do these horses hurry me so fast? Where is this man, who calls himself my friend, going to carry me? Is it from Eloisa? Is it by her order that I am despatched so precipitately away? Mistaken Eloisa!—How rapidly does the chaise move! Whence come I? Where am I going? Why all this expedition? Are ye afraid, ye persecutors, that I should not fly fast enough to ruin? O friendship! O love! is this your contrivance? are these your favours?——

Have you consulted your heart in driving me from you so suddenly? Are you capable, tell me Eloisa, are you capable of renouncing me for ever? No, that tender heart still loves me, I know it does——In spite of fortune, in spite of itself, it will love me for ever.——I see it, you have permitted yourself to be persuaded\*——What lasting repentance are you preparing for yourself!——Alas! it will be too late——how! forget me! I did not know your heart!——Oh! consider yourself, consider me, consider—hear me: it is yet time enough—'twas cruel to banish me: I fly from you swifter than the wind.——Say but the word, but one word, and I return quicker than lightening. Say but one word, and we will be united for ever. We ought to be——We will be——Alas! I complain to the winds——I am going again——I am

\* It appears by the sequel, that these suspicions fell upon Lord B——, and that Clara applies them to herself.

am going to live and die far from Eloisa——  
Live! did I say? It is impossible———

---

## L E T T E R LXVIII.

LORD B—— TO ELOISA.

**Y**OUR cousin will give you information concerning your friend. I imagine, also, he has written to you himself by the post. First satisfy your impatience on that head, that you may afterwards peruse this letter with composure; for I give you previous notice, the subject of it demands your attention. I know mankind; I have lived a long time in a few years, and have acquired experience at my own cost; the progress of the passions having been my road to philosophy. But of all the extraordinary things that have come within the compass of my observation, I never saw any thing equal to you and your lover. It is not that either the one or the other has any peculiar characteristick, whereby you might at first be known and distinguished, and through the want of which your's might well enough be mistaken, by a superficial observer, for minds of a common and ordinary cast. You are eminently distinguished, however, by this very difficulty of distinguishing you, and in that the features of a common model, some one of which is wanting in every individual, are all equally perfect in you. Thus every printed copy that comes from the press has its peculiar defects, which distinguish it from the rest of its kind; and



if there should happen to come one quite perfect, however beautiful it might appear at first sight, it must be accurately examined to know its perfection. The first time I saw your lover, I was struck as with something new; my good opinion of him increasing daily, in proportion as I found cause. With regard to yourself, it was quite otherwise; and the sentiments you inspired were such as I mistook for those of love. The impression you made on me, however, did not arise so much from a difference of sex, as from a characteristical perfection, of which the heart cannot be insensible, though love were out of the question. I can see what you would be, though, without your friend; but I cannot pretend to say what he would prove without you. Many men may resemble him, but there is but one Eloisa in the world. After doing you an injury, which I shall never forgive myself, your letter soon convinced me of the nature of my sentiments concerning you. I found I was not jealous, and consequently not in love. I saw that you were too amiable for me; that you deserved the first-fruits of the heart, and that mine was unworthy of you.

From that moment I took an interest in your mutual happiness, which will never abate; and, imagining it in my power to remove every obstacle to your bliss, I made an indiscrete application to your father; the bad success of which is one motive to animate my zeal in your favour. Indulge me so far as to hear me, and  
perhaps

perhaps I may yet repair the mischief I have occasioned. Examine your heart, Eloisa, and see if it be possible for you to extinguish the flame with which it burns. There was a time, perhaps, when you would have stopped its progress; but if Eloisa fell from a state of innocence, how will she resist after her fall? How will she be able to withstand the power of love triumphing over her weakness, and armed with the dangerous weapons of her past pleasures? Let not your heart impose on itself; but renounce the fallacious presumption that seduces you—you are undone, if you are still to combat with love: you will be debased and vanquished, while a sense of your debasement will by degrees stifle all your virtues. Love has insinuated itself too far into your mind, for you ever to drive it thence. It has eaten its way, has penetrated into its inmost recesses, like a corrosive menstruum, whose impressions you will never be able to efface, without destroying at the same time all that virtuous sensibility you received from the hand of nature—root out love from your mind, and you will have nothing left in it truly estimable. Incapable of changing the condition of your heart, what then remains for you to do? Nothing sure but to render your union legitimate. To this end, I will propose to you the only method which now offers. Make use of it while it is yet time, and add to innocence and virtue the exercise of that good sense with which heaven has endowed you.

I have a pretty considerable estate in Yorkshire, which has been long in our family, and was the seat of my ancestors. The mansion-house is old, but in good condition, and convenient; the country about it is solitary, but pleasant and variegated. The river Ouse, which runs through the park, presents at once a charming prospect to the view, and affords a commodious transport for all kinds of necessaries. The income of the estate is sufficient for the reputable maintenance of the master, and might be doubled in its value, if under his immediate inspection. Hateful prepossession, and blind prejudices harbour not in that delightful country; the peaceful inhabitant of which preserves the ancient manners, whose simplicity presents to you a picture of the Valois, such as is described by the affecting touches of your lover's pen. This estate, Eloisa, is your's, if you will deign to accept it, and reside there with your friend. There may you see accomplished all those tender wishes with which he concludes the letter I have just hinted at.

Come, amiable and faithful pair! the choicest pattern of true lovers; come, and take possession of a spot destined for the asylum of love and innocence. Come, and, in the face of God and man, confirm the gentle ties by which you are united. Come, and let your example do honour to a country where your virtues will be revered, and where the people, bred up in innocence and simplicity, will be proud to imitate them.

them. May you enjoy in that peaceful retirement, and with the same sentiments that united you, the happiness of souls truly refined! may your chaste embraces be crowned with offspring resembling yourselves! may you see your days lengthened to an honourable old age, and peacefully end them in the arms of your children! and may our posterity, in relating the story of your union, affectingly repeat, “*Here was the asylum of innocence, this was the refuge of the two lovers.*”

Your destiny, Eloisa, is in your own power. Weigh maturely the proposal I make to you, and examine only the main point; for, as to the rest, I shall take upon myself to settle every thing with your friend, and make firm and irrevocable the engagement into which I am willing to enter. I shall take charge also for the security of your departure, and the care of your person till your arrival. There you may be immediately married without difficulty: for with us, a girl that is marriageable has no need of any one’s consent to dispose of herself as she pleases\*. Our laws contradict not those of nature; and although there sometimes result from their agreement some slight inconveniencies, they are nothing compared to those it prevents. I have left at Vevai my valet-de-chambre, a man of probity and

O 3

courage,

\* It is to be observed, that these letters were written before the act of parliament, called the *marriage act*, had passed in England.

courage, as well as discreet, and of approved fidelity. You may easily concert matters with him, either by word of mouth, or by letter, with the assistance of Reggianino, without the latter's knowing any thing of the affair. When every thing is ready, we will set out to meet you, and you shall not quit your father's house but under the conduct and protection of your husband.

I now leave you to think of my proposal: but give me leave to say again, beware of the consequences of prejudice, and those false scruples, which too often, under the pretext of honour, conduct us to vice. I foresee what will happen to you if you reject my offers. The tyranny of an obstinate father will plunge you into an abyss you will not be aware of till after your fall. Your gentleness of disposition degenerates sometimes into timidity: you will fall a sacrifice to the chimerical distinction of rank\*; you will be forced into an engagement which your heart will abhor. The world may approve your conduct, but your heart will daily give the lie to publick opinion; you will be honoured, and yet contemptible in your own opinion. How much better is it to pass your life in obscurity and virtue!

*P. S.*—Being in doubt concerning your resolution, I write to you, unknown to your friend;  
left

\* Chimerical distinction of rank! It is an English peer that talks thus. Can there be any reality in all this? Reader, what think you of it?

lest a refusal on your part should ruin at once the expectations I have formed of the good effects my care and advice may have upon his mind.

---

## L E T T E R L X I X.

ELOISA TO CLARA.

**O**H! my dear, in what trouble did you leave me last night! and what a night did I pass in reflecting on the contents of that fatal letter! No, never did so powerful a temptation assail my heart; never did I experience the like agitation of mind: nor was ever more at a loss to compose it. Hitherto, reason has darted some ray of light to direct my steps; on every embarrassing occasion, I have been able to discern the most virtuous part, and immediately to embrace it. But now, debased and overcome, my resolution does nothing but fluctuate between contending passions: my weak heart has now no other choice than its foibles; and so deplorable is my blindness that, if I even choose for the best, my choice is not directed by virtue, and therefore I feel no less remorse than if I had done ill. You know who my father designs for my husband: you know, also, to whom the indissoluble bond of love has united me: would I be virtuous, filial obedience and plighted vows impose on me contradictory obligations. Shall I follow the inclinations of my heart?—  
Shall I pay a greater regard to a lover

than to a parent? In listening to the voice of either love or nature, I cannot avoid driving the one or the other to despair. In sacrificing myself to my duty, I must either way be guilty of a crime, and which ever party I take, I must die criminal and unhappy.

Ah, my dear friend! you, who have been my constant and only resource, who have saved me so often from death and despair, oh! think of my present horrible state of mind; for never were your kind offices of consolation more necessary. You know I have listened to your advice, that I have followed your counsel: you have seen how far, at the expense of my happiness, I have paid a deference to the voice of friendship. Take pity on me, then, in the trouble you have brought upon me. As you have begun, continue to assist me; sustain my drooping spirits, and think for her who can no longer think for herself. You can read this heart that loves you, you know it better than I; learn then my difficulties, and choose in my stead, since I have no longer the power to will, nor the reason to choose for myself.

Read over the letter of that generous Englishman: read it, my dear, again and again. Are you not affected by the charming picture he has drawn of that happiness which love, peace, and virtue have yet in store for your friend? How ravishing that union of souls! What inexpressible delight it affords, even in the midst of remorse. Heavens! how would my heart rejoice

joice in conjugal felicity! And is innocence and happiness yet in my power! May I hope to expire with love and joy, in the embraces of a beloved husband, amidst the dear pledges of his tenderness! Shall I hesitate then a moment, and not fly to repair my faults in the arms of him who seduced me to commit them? Why do I delay to become a virtuous and chaste mother of an endearing family?—Oh! that my parents could but see me thus raised out of my degeneracy! That they might but see how well I would acquit myself, in my turn, of those sacred duties they have discharged towards me!—And your's! ungrateful, unnatural daughter (might they not say) who shall discharge your's to them, when you are so ready to forget them? Is it by plunging a dagger into the heart of your own mother, that you prepare to become a mother yourself? Can she, who dishonours her own family, teach her children to respect their's? Go, unworthy object of the blind fondness of your doting parents! Abandon them to their grief for having given you birth; load their old age with infamy, and bring their grey hairs with sorrow to the grave.——Go, and enjoy, if thou canst, a happiness purchased at such a price.

Good God! what horrors surround me! shall I fly by stealth from my native country, dishonour my family, abandon at once father, mother, friends, relations, and even you, my dear Clara; you, my gentle friend, so well beloved of



my heart: you, who from our earliest infancy have hardly ever been absent from me a day—shall I leave you, lose you, never see you more?—Ah, no! May never—How wretched, how cruelly afflicted is your unhappy friend! She sees before her a variety of evils; and nothing remains to yield her consolation.—But, my mind wanders—so many conflicts surpass my strength, and perplex my reason: I lose at once my fortitude and understanding, I have no hope but in you alone. Advise me—choose for me—or leave me to perish in perplexity and despair.

---

### L E T T E R LXX.

#### ANSWER TO THE PRECEDING.

**T**HERE is too just cause, my dear Eloisa, for your perplexity: I foresaw, but could not prevent it: I feel, but cannot remove it: nay, what is still worse in your unhappy situation, there is no one that can extricate you but yourself. Were prudence only required, friendship might possibly relieve your agitated mind; were it only necessary to choose the good from the evil, mistaken passion might be over-ruled by disinterested advice. But in your case, whatever side you take, nature both authorises and condemns you; reason, at the same time, commends and blames you; duty is silent, or contradicts itself; the consequences are equally to be dreaded on one part or the other: in the mean while,

while, you can neither safely choose nor remain undetermined; you have nothing but evils to take your choice of, and your heart is the only proper judge which of them it can best support. I own, the importance of the deliberation frightens, and extremely afflicts me. Whatever destiny you prefer, it will be still unworthy of you; and, as I can neither point out your duty, nor conduct you to happiness, I have not the courage to decide for you. This is the first refusal you ever met with from your friend; and I feel, by the pain it costs me, that it will be the last: but I should betray your confidence, should I take upon me to direct you in an affair, about which prudence itself is silent; and in which your best and only guide is your own inclination.

Blame me not wrongfully, Eloisa, nor condemn me too soon. I know there are friends so circumspect that, not to expose themselves to consequences, they refuse to give their advice on difficult occasions, and by that reserve but increase the danger of those they should serve. Think me not one of those; you will see presently if this heart, sincerely your's, is capable of such timid precautions: permit me, therefore, instead of advising you in your affairs, to mention a little of my own.

Have you never observed, my dear, how much every one who knows you is attached to your person?—That a father or mother should be fond of an only daughter is not at all surprising; that an amorous youth should be inflamed by

a lovely object is also as little extraordinary; but that, at an age of sedateness and maturity, a man of so cold a disposition as Mr. Wolmar should be taken with you at first sight; that a whole family should be unanimous to idolise you; that you should be as much the darling of a man so little affectionate as my father, and perhaps more so than any of his own children; that friends, acquaintance, domesticks, neighbours, that the inhabitants of a whole town, should unanimously join in admiring and respecting you; this, my dear, is a concurrence of circumstances more extraordinary; and which could not have happened, did you not possess something peculiarly engaging. Do you know, Eloisa, what this something is? It is neither your beauty, your wit, your affability, nor any thing that is understood by the talent of pleasing: but it is that tenderness of heart, that sweetness of disposition, that has no equal: it is the talent of loving others, my dear, that makes you so universally beloved. Every other charm may be withstood, but benevolence is irresistible; and there is no method so sure to obtain the love of others, as that of having an affection for them. There are a thousand women more beautiful; many are as agreeable; but you alone possess, with all that is agreeable, that seducing charm, which not only pleases, but affects and ravishes every heart. It is easily perceived that your's requests only to be accepted, and the delightful sympathy it pants after flies to reward it in turn.

You

You see, for instance, with surprise, the incredible affection Lord B—— has for your friend: you see his zeal for your happiness; you receive with admiration his generous offers; you attribute them to his virtue only. My dear cousin, you are mistaken. God forbid I should extenuate his Lordship's beneficence, or undervalue his greatness of soul! but, believe me, his zeal, disinterested as it is, would be less fervent, if under the same circumstances he had to do with different people. It is the irresistible ascendant you and your friend have over him that, without his perceiving it, determines his resolution, and makes him do that out of affection, which he imagines proceeds only from motives of generosity. This is what always will be effected by minds of a certain temper. They transform, in a manner, every other into their own likeness; having a sphere of activity wherein nothing can resist their power. It is impossible to know without imitating them, while from their own sublime elevation they attract all that are about them. It is for this reason, my dear, that neither you nor your friend will perhaps ever know mankind; for you will rather see them such as you model them, than such as they are in themselves. You will lead the way for all those among whom you live; others will either imitate or fly from you; and perhaps you will meet with nothing in the world similar to what you have hitherto seen.

Let

Let us come now to myself; to me whom the tie of consanguinity, a similarity of age, and above all, a perfect conformity of taste and humour, with a very opposite temperament, have united to you from your infancy.

*Congiunti eran gl' alberghi,  
Ma piu congiunti i cori:  
Conforme ira l' etate,  
Ma 'l pensier piu conforme.*

By birth in person close allied,  
Yet closer still in mind!  
Near in our years, yet in our thoughts  
More intimately join'd,

What, think you, has been the effect of that captivating influence, which is felt by every one that approaches you, on her who has been intimate with you from her childhood? Can you think there subsists between us but an ordinary connexion? Do not mine eyes communicate their sparkling joy in meeting your's? Do you not perceive in my heart the pleasure of partaking your pains, and lamenting with you? Can I forget that, in the first transports of a growing passion, my friendship was never disagreeable; and that the complaints of your lover could never prevail on you to send me from you, or prevent me from being a witness to your weakness? This, my Eloisa, was a critical juncture. I am sensible how great a sacrifice you made to modesty, in making me acquainted with an error I happily escaped.

Never

Never should I have been your confident had I been but half your friend—no, our souls felt themselves too intimately united for any thing ever to part them.

What is it that makes the friendship of women, I mean of those who are capable of love, so lukewarm and short-lived? It is the interests of love—it is the empire of beauty—it is the jealousy of conquest. Now, if any thing of that kind could have divided us, we should have been already divided. But, were my heart less insensible to love, were I even ignorant that your affections are so deeply rooted as to end but with life, your lover is my friend, my brother: who ever knew the ties of a sincere friendship broken by those of love? As for Mr. Orbe, he may be long enough proud of your good opinion, before it will give me the least uneasiness; nor have I any stronger inclination to keep him by violence, than you have to take him from me. Would to heaven I could cure you of your passion, at the expense of his! Though I keep him with pleasure, I should with greater pleasure resign him.

With regard to my person, I may make what pretensions I please to beauty; you will not set yourself in competition with me; for I am sure it will never enter into your head to desire to know which of us is the handsomest. I must confess, I have not been altogether so indifferent on this head; but knew how to give place to your superiority, without the  
least

least mortification. Methinks I am rather proud than jealous of it; for as the charms of your features are such as would not become mine, they take nothing from me, whereas I think myself handsome in your beauty, amiable in your graces, and adorned with your talents; thus, I pride myself in your perfections, and admire myself the most in you. I shall never choose, however, to give pain on my own account; being sufficiently handsome in myself for any use I have for beauty. Any thing more is needless; and it requires not much humility to yield the superiority to you.

You are doubtless impatient to know, to what purpose is all this preamble. It is to this—I cannot give you the advice you request. I have given you my reasons for it; but, notwithstanding this, the choice you shall make for yourself will at the same time be that of your friend; for, whatever be your fortune, I am resolved to accompany you, and partake of it. If you go, I follow you. If you stay, so do I. I have formed a determined and unalterable resolution. It is my duty, nor shall any thing prevent me. My fatal indulgence to your passion has been your ruin: your destiny ought, therefore, to be mine; and, as we have been inseparable from our cradles, we ought to be so to the grave.— I foresee you will think this an absurd project; it is, however, at bottom, a more discreet one, perhaps, than you may imagine: I have not the same motives for doubt and irresolution as you have.

have. In the first place, as to my family; if I leave an easy father, I leave an indifferent one, who permits his children to do just as they please, more through neglect than indulgence: for you know he interests himself much more in the affairs of Europe than his own, and that his daughter is much less the object of his concern than the Pragmatick Sanction. I am besides not like you, an only child, and shall be hardly missed among those that remain.

It is true, I leave a treaty of marriage just on the point of being brought to a conclusion. *Manco*——*male*, my dear; it is the affair of Mr. Orbe, if he loves me, to console himself for the disappointment. For my part, although I esteem his character, am not without affection for his person, and regret in his loss a very honest man, he is nothing to me in comparison to Eloisa. Tell me, is the Soul of any sex? I really cannot perceive it in mine. I may have my fancies, but very little of love. A husband might be useful to me; but he would never be any thing to me but a husband; and that a girl who is not ugly may find every where. But, take care, my dear cousin, although *I* do not hesitate, I do not say that *you* ought not; nor would I insinuate that *you* should resolve to *do* what *I* am resolved to *imitate*. There is a wide difference between you and me; and your duty is much severer than mine. You know that an unparelled affection for you possesses my heart, and almost stifles every other sentiment. From my infancy  
I have



I have been attached to you by an habitual and irresistible impulse; so that I perfectly love no one else; and if I have some few ties of nature and gratitude to break through, I shall be encouraged to do it by your example. I shall say to myself, I have but imitated Eloisa, and shall think myself justified.

---

## B I L L E T.

ELOISA TO CLARA.

**I** Understand you, my dear Clara, and thank you. For once, at least, I will do my duty; and shall not be totally unworthy of your friendship.

---

## L E T T E R LXXI.

ELOISA TO LORD B——.

**Y**OUR lordship's last letter has affected me in the highest degree with admiration and gratitude; nor will my friend, who is honoured with your protection, be less so, when he knows the obligations you would have conferred on us. The unhappy, alas! only know the value of benevolent minds. We had before but too many reasons to acknowledge that of your's, whose heroick virtue will never be forgotten, though after this it cannot surprise us.

How fortunate should I think myself to live under the auspices of so generous a friend, and to reap from your benevolence that happiness  
which

which fortune has denied me. But I see, my lord, I see with despair, your good designs will be frustrated! my cruel destiny will counteract your friendship; and the delightful prospect of the blessings you offer to my acceptance serves only to render their loss more sensible. You offer a secure and agreeable retreat to two persecuted lovers; you would render their passion legitimate, their union sacred; and I know that, under your protection, I could easily elude the pursuits of my irritated relations. This would complete our love, but would it ensure our felicity? Ah! no: if you would have Eloisa contented and happy, give her an asylum yet more secure, an asylum from shame and repentance. You anticipate our wants, and, by an unparelled generosity, deprive yourself of your own fortune to bestow on us. More wealthy, more honoured by your benevolence than my own patrimony, I may recover every thing I have lost, and you will condescend to supply the place of a father.—Ah! my lord, shall I be worthy of another father when I abandon him whom nature gave me?

This is the source of the reproaches my wounded conscience makes me, and of those secret pangs that rend my heart.

I do not enquire whether I have a right to dispose of myself contrary to the will of those who gave me birth; but whether I can do it without involving them in a mortal affliction; whether I can abandon them without bringing them

them to despair; whether, alas! I have a right to take away their life who gave me mine? How long has the virtuous mind taken upon itself thus to balance the rights of consanguinity and laws of nature? Since when has the feeling heart presumed thus nicely to distinguish the bounds of filial gratitude? Is it not a crime to proceed in questioning our duty to its very utmost limits? Will any one so scrupulously enquire into its extent, unless they are tempted to go beyond it? Shall I cruelly abandon those by whom I live and breathe—those who so tenderly preserve the life and being they gave me—those who have no hope, no pleasure, but in me? A father near sixty years of age! A mother weak and languishing! I their only child! Shall I leave them without help in the solitude and troubles of old age; at a time when I should exercise towards them that tender sollicitude they have lavished on me? Shall I involve their latter days in shame and sorrow? Will not my troubled conscience incessantly upbraid me, and represent my despairing parents breathing out their last in curses on the ungrateful daughter that forsook and dishonoured them?—No, my lord, virtue, whose paths I have forsaken, may in turn abandon me, and no longer actuate my heart; but this horrible idea will supply its dictates, will follow, will torment me every hour of my life, and make me miserable, in the midst of happiness. In a word, if I am doomed to be

be

be unhappy the rest of my days, I will run the risque of every other remorse ; but this is too horrible for me to support. I confess, I cannot invalidate your arguments. I have but too great an inclination to think them just : but, my lord, you are unmarried ; don't you think a man ought to be a father himself, to advise the children of others ? As to me, I am determined what to do : my parents will make me unhappy, I know they will : but it will be less hard for me to support my own misery than the thought of having been the cause of their's ; for which reason, I will never forsake my father's house. Begone, then, ye sweet and flattering illusions ! Ideas of so desirable a felicity ! Go, vanish like a dream : for such I will ever think ye. And you, too generous friend, lay aside your agreeable designs, and let their remembrance only remain in the bottom of a heart, too grateful ever to forget them. If our misfortunes, however, are not too great to discourage your noble mind ; if your generosity is not totally exhausted, there is yet a way to exercise it with reputation, and he, whom you honour under the name of friend, may under your care be deserving of it. Judge not of him by the situation in which you now see him ; his extravagance is not the effect of pusillanimity, but of an ambitious and susceptible disposition making head against adversity. There is often more insensibility than fortitude in apparent moderation : common men know nothing of violent sorrow, nor do great passions  
ever

ever break out in weak minds. He possesses all that energy of sentiment which is the characteristick of a noble soul ; and which is, alas ! the cause of my present despair. Your lordship may indeed believe me, had he been only a *common* man, Eloisa had not been undone.

No, my lord, that secret prepossession in his favour, which was followed by our manifest esteem, did not deceive you. He is worthy of all you did for him before you were acquainted with his merit ; and you will do more for him, if possible, as you know him better. Yes, be your lordship his comforter, his patron, his friend, his father ; it is both for your own sake and his I conjure you to this ; he will justify your confidence, he will honour your benefactions, he will practise your precepts, he will imitate your virtues, and will learn your wisdom. Ah ! my lord, if he should become in your hands what he is capable of being, you will have reason to be proud of your charge.

## L E T T E R LXXII.

FROM ELOISA.

**A**ND do you, too, my dear friend ! my only hope ! do you come to wound afresh my heart, oppressed already with a load of sorrow ! I was prepared to bear the shocks of adversity ; long has my foreboding heart announced their coming ; and I should have supported them

them with patience; but you, for whom I suffer! insupportable! I am struck with horror to see my sorrows aggravated by one who ought to alleviate them. What tender consolations did not I promise myself to receive from you? But all are vanished with your fortitude! How often have I not flattered myself, that your magnanimity would strengthen my weakness; that your deserts would efface my error; and your elevated virtues raised up my debased mind! How many times have I not dried up my tears, saying to myself, I suffer for him, it is true, but he is worthy—I am culpable, but he is virtuous—I have a thousand troubles, but his constancy supports me; in his love I find a recompense for all my cares. Vain imagination! on the first trial thou hast deceived me! Where is now that sublime passion which could elevate your sentiments, and display your virtues? What is become of those high-boasted maxims? your imitation of great examples? Where is that philosopher whom adversity could not shake, yet falls before the first accident that parts him from his mistress? How shall I hereafter excuse my ill-conduct to myself, when in him that seduced me, I see a man without courage, effeminate; one whose weak mind sinks under the first reverse of fortune, and absurdly renounces his reason the moment he has occasion to make use of it? Good God! that in my present state of humiliation I should be reduced to blush for my choice, as much as for my weakness.

Reflect

Reflect a little—think how far you forget yourself; can your wandering and impatient mind stoop so low as to be guilty of cruelty? Do you presume to reproach me? Do you complain of me?—complain of Eloisa! Barbarous man!—How comes it that remorse did not hold your hand? why did not the most endearing proofs of the tenderest passion that ever existed deprive you of the power to insult me? How despicable must be your heart, if it can doubt of the fidelity of mine!—But no, you do not, you cannot doubt it. I defy your utmost impatience to do this; nay, even at this instant, while I express my abhorrence of your injustice, you must see, too plainly, the cause of the first emotion of anger I ever felt in my life.

Was it you that asked me whether I had not ruined myself by my inconsiderate confidence, and if my designs had not succeeded? How would you not blush for such cruel insinuations, if you knew the fond hopes that seduced me, if you knew the projects I had formed for our mutual happiness, and how they are now vanished with all my comforts. I dare flatter myself still, you will one day know better, and your remorse amply revenge your reproaches. You know my father's prohibition; you are not ignorant of the publick talk; I foresaw the consequences; I had them represented to you by my cousin: you were as sensible of them as we, and for our mutual preservation it was necessary to submit to a separation.

I, there-

I, therefore, drove you away, as you injuriously term it. But for whose sake was I induced to this? Have you no delicacy? Ungrateful man! it was for the sake of a heart insensible of its own worth, and that would rather die a thousand deaths than see me rendered infamous. Tell me, what would become of you, if I were given up to shame? Do you think you could support my dishonour? Come, cruel as you are, if you think so; come, and receive the sacrifice of my reputation with the same fortitude as I will offer it up. Come back, nor fear to be disclaimed by her to whom you were always dear. I am ready to declare, in the face of heaven and earth, the engagements of our mutual passion; I am ready boldly to declare you my lover, and to expire in your arms with affection and shame. I had rather the whole world should know my tenderness than that you should one moment doubt it: the shafts of ignominy wound not so deep as your reproaches.

I conjure you, let us for ever put an end to these reciprocal complaints; they are to me intolerable. Good heavens! how can those who love each other delight in quarrelling; and lose in tormenting themselves those moments in which they stand in need of mutual consolation! No, my friend, what end does it serve to affect a disagreement which does not subsist? Let us complain of fortune, but not of love. Never did it form a more perfect, a more lasting,



union; our souls are too intimately blended ever to be separated: nor can we live apart from each other, but as two parts of one being. How is it, then, that you only feel your own griefs? Why do you not sympathise with those of your friend? Why do you not perceive in your breast the heart-felt sighs of her's? Alas! they are more affecting than your impassioned ravings! If you partook of my sufferings, you would even more severely feel them than your own.

You say *your* situation is deplorable! Think of Eloisa's, and lament only for her. Consider, in our common misfortune, the different state of your sex and mine, and judge which is most deplorable. Affected by violent passions, to pretend to be insensible; a prey to a thousand griefs, to be obliged to appear chearful and content; to have a serene countenance with an agitated mind; to speak always contrary to one's thoughts; to disguise all we feel; to be deceitful through obligation, and to speak untruth through modesty; such is the habitual situation of every young woman of my age. Thus we pass the prime of our youth, under the tyranny of decorum, which is at length aggravated by that of our parents, in forcing us into an unsuitable marriage. In vain, however, would men lay a restraint on the inclinations; the heart gives law to itself; it eludes the shackles of slavery, and bestows itself at its own pleasure.

Clogged

Clogged with a yoke of iron, which heaven does not impose on us, they unite the body without the soul; the person and the inclinations are separately engaged, and an unhappy victim is forced into guilt, by obliging her to enter into a sacred engagement, which she wants, in one respect or other, an essential power to fulfill. Are there not some young women more discreet? Alas! I know there are. There are those that have never loved! Peace be with them! They have withstood that fatal passion! I would also have resisted it. They are more virtuous! Do they love virtue better than I? Had it not been for you, for you alone, I had ever loved it.—Is it then true that I love virtue no longer?—Is it you that hath ruined me, and is it I who must console you? But what will become of me? The consolation of friendship is weak where that of love is wanting! Who then can give me comfort in my affliction? With what a dreadful situation am I threatened? I, who, for having committed a crime, see myself ready to be plunged into a new scene of guilt, by entering into an abhorred, and perhaps inevitable marriage? Where shall I find tears sufficient to mourn my guilt and lament my lover, if I yield? On the other hand, how shall I find resolution, in my present depression of mind, to resist? Methinks, I see already the fury of an incensed father! I feel myself already moved by the cries of nature! I feel my heart-strings torn by the pangs of love.

Deprived of thee, I am without resource, without support, without hope; the past is disgraceful, the present afflicting, and the future terrible. I thought I had done every thing for our happiness, but we are only made more miserable, by preparing the way for a more cruel separation. Our fleeting pleasure is past, while the remorse it occasioned remains, and the shame which overwhelms me is without alleviation.

It belongs to me, to me alone, to be weak and miserable. Let me then weep and suffer; my tears are inexhaustible as my fault is irreparable, while time, that sovereign cure for almost every thing, brings to me only new motives for tears: but you, who have no violence to fear, who are unmortified by shame, whom nothing constrains to disguise your sentiments: you, who have only just tasted misfortune, and possess at least your former virtues unblemished; how dare you demean yourself so far, as to sigh and sob like a woman, or betray your impatience like a madman? Have not I merited contempt enough on your account without your increasing it, by making yourself contemptible; without overwhelming me at once with my own infamy and your's? Recall then your resolution; learn to bear your misfortunes, and be like a man: be yet, if I dare to say so, the lover of Eloisa. If I am no longer worthy to animate your courage, remember at least, what I once was. Deserve, then, what for your sake I have ceased to be; and, though  
you

you have dishonoured me once, do not dishonour me again.—No, my best friend, it is not you that I discover in that effeminate letter, which I would forget for ever, and which I look upon already as disowned by you. I hope, debased and confused as I am, I dare hope, the remembrance of me does not inspire sentiments so base; but that I am more respected by a heart it was in my power to inflame, and that I shall not have additional cause to reproach myself in your weakness.

Happy in your misfortune, you have met with the most valuable recompense that was ever known to a susceptible mind. Heaven, in your adversity, has given you a friend; and has made it doubtful whether what it has bestowed is not a greater blessing than that which it has deprived you of. Love and respect that too generous man; who, at the expense of his own ease, condescends to interest himself in your peace and preservation. How would you be affected, if you knew every thing he would have done for you! But what signifies exciting your gratitude to aggravate your affliction? You have no need to be informed how much he loves you, to know his worth; and you cannot respect him as he deserves without loving him as you ought.

## L E T T E R LXXIII.

FROM CLARA.

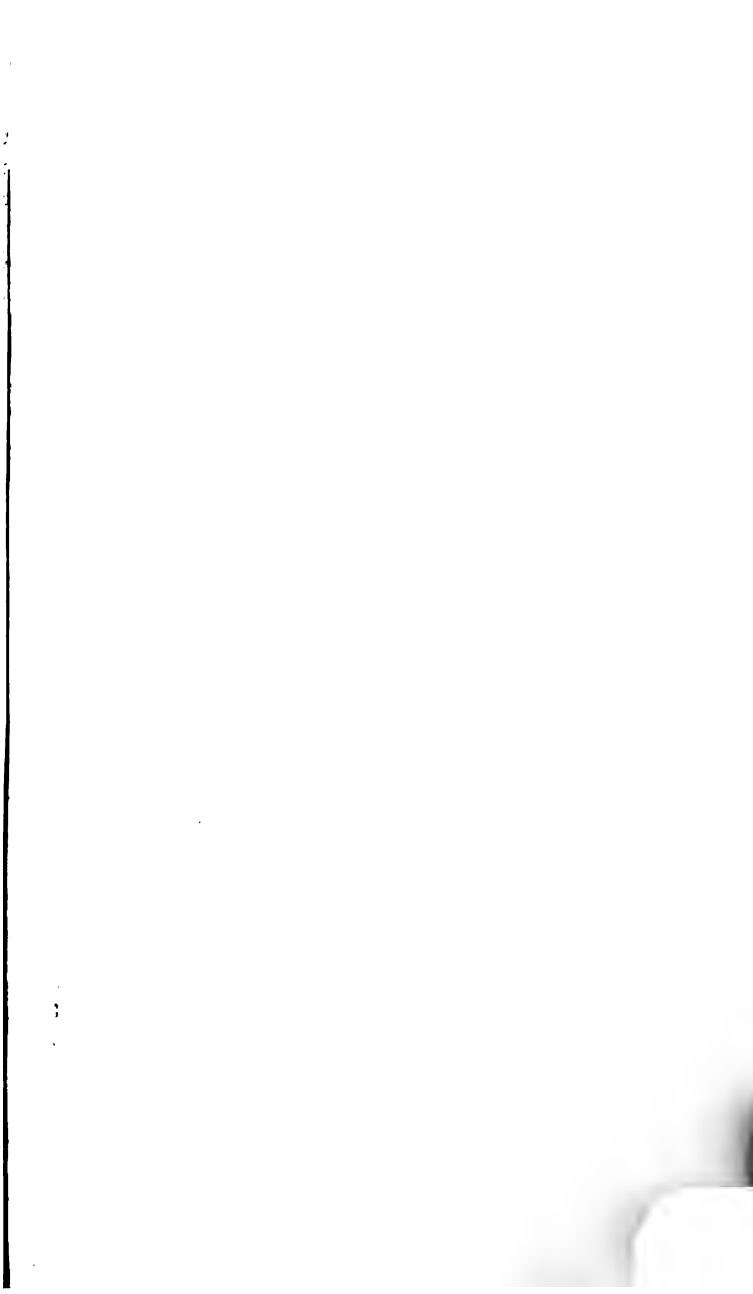
**Y**OUR passion prevails over your delicacy, and you know better how to suffer than to make a merit of your sufferings. You would otherwise never have written in a strain of reproach to Eloisa, in her present situation. Because you are uneasy, truly, you must aggravate her uneasiness, which is greater than your's. I have told you a thousand times that I never saw so grumbling a lover as you: always ready to dispute about nothing, love is to you a state of warfare: or, if sometimes you are a little tractable, it is only that you may have an opportunity to complain of having been so. How disagreeable must be such lovers, and how happy do I think myself in never having had any but such as I could dismiss when I pleased, without a tear being shed on either side!

You must change your tone, believe me, if you would have Eloisa survive her present distress: it is too much for her to support her own grief and your displeasure. Learn for once to soothe her too susceptible heart: you owe her the most tender consolation: and ought to be afraid lest you should aggravate your misfortune by lamenting it. At least, if you must complain, vent your complaints against me, who am the only cause of your separation. Yes, my friend you guessed right: I suggested to her the part  
her

her honour and security required her to take; or rather I obliged her to take it, by exaggerating her danger: I prevailed also on you to depart, and we all have but done our duty. I did more, however, than this. I prevented her from accepting the offers of Lord B——; I have prevented your being happy; but the happiness of Eloisa is dearer to me than your's: I knew she could not be happy after leaving her parents to shame and despair; and I can hardly comprehend, with regard to yourself, what kind of happiness you can taste at the expense of her's. Be that what it will, such has been my conduct and offense; and since you delight in quarrelling with those you love, you see the occasion you have to begin with me alone: if in this you do not cease to be ungrateful, you will at least cease to be unjust. For my part, in whatever manner you behave to me, I shall always behave the same towards you: so long as Eloisa loves you, you will be dear to me, and more I cannot say. I am not sorry that I never opposed or favoured your passion. The disinterested friendship which always actuated me in that affair justifies me equally in what I have done for and against you; and if at any time I interested myself in your passion more perhaps than became me, my heart sufficiently excused me. I shall never blush for the services I was able to do my friend, nor shall reproach myself because they were useless. I have not forgot  
what

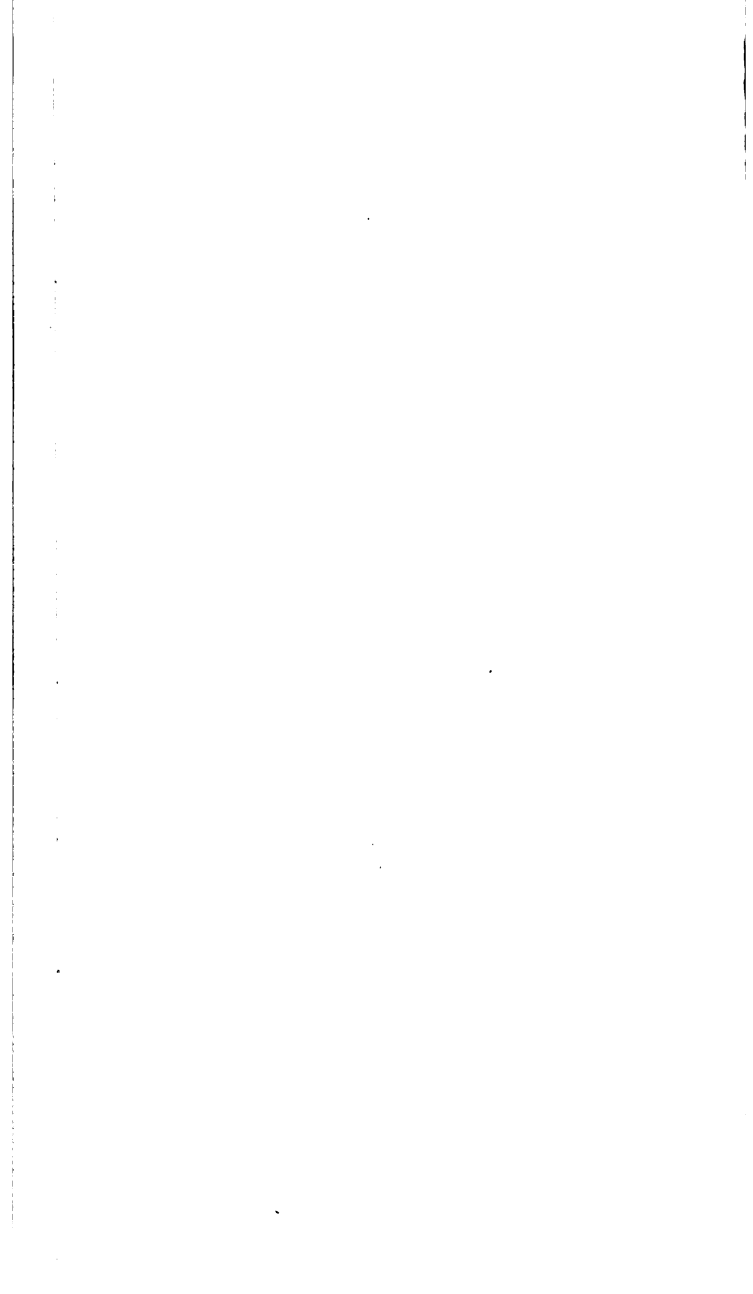
what you formerly taught me, of the fortitude of the wise man under misfortunes; and fancy I could remind you of several maxims to that purpose: but I have learned, by the example of Eloisa, that a girl of my age is, to a philosopher, a bad preceptor, and a dangerous pupil.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.











MAY 18 1943

